

UC-NRLF



\$B 382 393

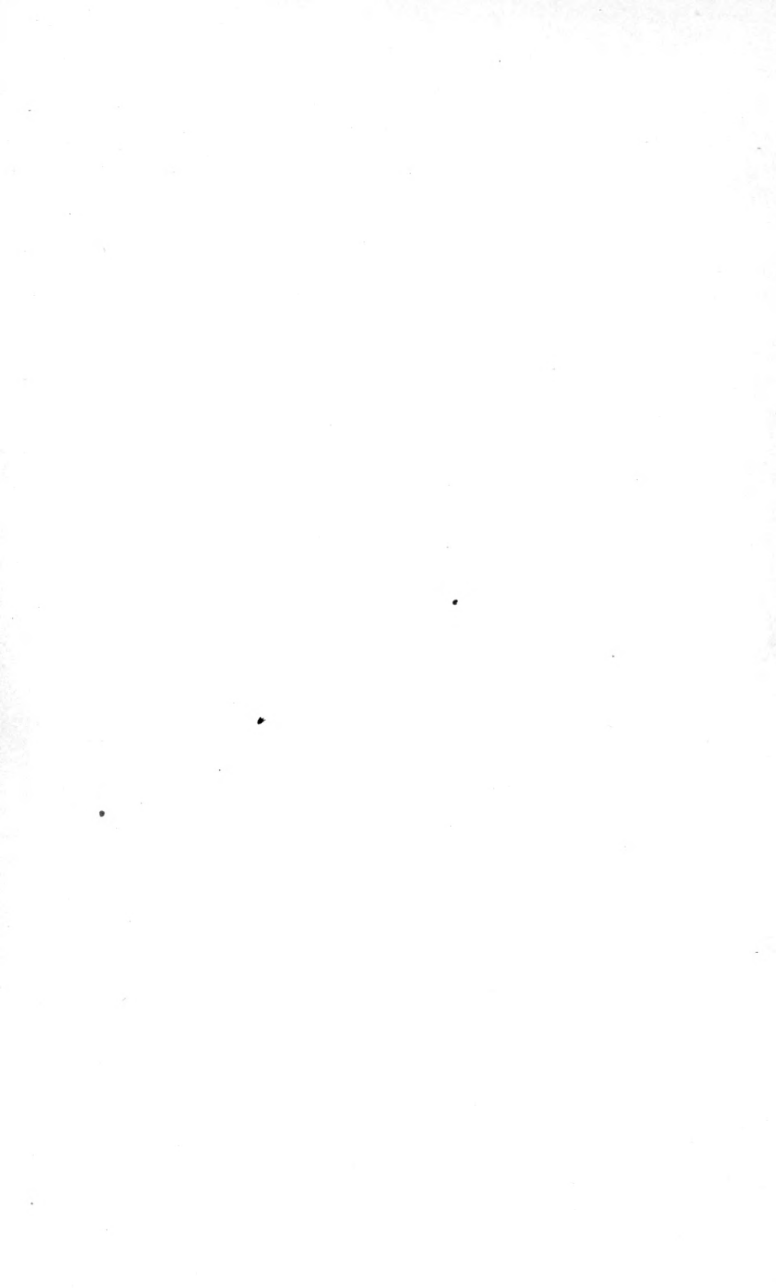
BERKELEY
LIBRARY
UNIVERSITY OF
CALIFORNIA

J. W. KOLOKMAN,
 Hof-Buchhändler I. M. der
 KAISERIN VON DEUTSCHLAND,
 2, Langham Place, LONDON, W.

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

ENGLISH-RUSSIAN

G R A M M A R



ENGLISH-RUSSIAN
G R A M M A R
OR
PRINCIPLES

OF THE
RUSSIAN LANGUAGE

FOR THE USE OF THE ENGLISH

with synoptical Tables for the Declensions and Conjugations, graduated
Themes or Exercises for the application of the grammatical Rules,
the correct Construction of these Exercises and the
Accentuation of all the Russian words

BY

CH. PH. REIFF

Fourth Edition carefully revised

PARIS
MAISONNEUVE AND Co.

25, QUAI VOLTAIRE, 25

1883

PRESERVATION
COPY ADDED
ORIGINAL TO BE
RETAINED

APR 21 1994

LEIPZIG.—PRINTED BY W. DRUGULIN, ORIENTAL AND OLD STYLE PRINTER.

PG 2111
R 45
1883
MAIN

AUTHOR'S PREFACE

TO THE THIRD EDITION

THE first edition of this Grammar was published at St-Petersburg in 1821, in French, under the title of *Grammaire russe à l'usage des étrangers qui désirent connaître à fond les principes de cette langue*. Up to that period all the elementary books, relating to the study of the Russian language, had been formed on the model of the Latin, which, without any sufficient reason, had been considered the type, according to which all other tongues must be regulated. Since that time the works of the Russian grammarians GRETSCH and VOSTOKOF, the philological Researches of PAVSKY on the formation of the Russian language and the Essay on the comparative Grammar of the Russian language by DAVYDOF, and other works on the same subject, have solved many grammatical difficulties and definitely fixed the principles of the language.

The above works I have carefully consulted in writing the new edition of my *Russian Grammar*

for the use of strangers. This edition, completely remodelled, consists of two parts. The first is the Grammar properly so called, in which I have endeavoured to give the rules with a clearness and precision which may render their retention by the memory easy. The second part consists of *Themes* or graduated *Exercises* on each particular rule, where I have placed the Russian words below the English, to serve as vocabulary. The *solution* or *correct construction* of these Exercises will be found at the end of the Grammar.

In order to render the work as extensively useful as possible to foreigners, I have published it simultaneously in three languages, French, English and German. Philologists who may wish to see the subject treated more in detail, can consult my French translation of the Russian Grammar of Mr GRETSCH, under the title of *Grammaire raisonnée de la Langue russe, précédée d'une Introduction sur l'histoire de cet idiome, de son alphabet et de sa Grammaire*, and published at St-Petersburg in 1829.

CH. R.

Carlsruhe, September 1862.



PUBLISHER'S NOTE

TO THE FOURTH EDITION



IN the Fourth Edition of the English-Russian Grammar of the late CH. REIFF, which we now place before those who wish to acquire, by an easy way, a thorough knowledge of the principles of the Russian language, no changes and alterations have been made. There was no sufficient reason of modifying and remoulding a work, the practical character and admirable arrangement of which have been appreciated by more than one competent judge. The book thus being on the whole and in substance left in its original shape, particular attention could be given to the correctness of the edition both regarding typographical errors and the justness of language.—Great pains have also been taken to render the entrance of the study of Russian more accessive by adopting a phonetic method for the transcription of Russian words in English; in which regard the First Part of the grammar has undergone an entire renovation.

Mr. CHAMIZER-LENOIR, a linguist well-known by his deserving exertions in this province, has committed himself to the task; and this scholar did his best in preparing the work for the press, and in carefully revising the sheets as they passed through the same.

We hope that this handy and neat new edition of a book, which, in spite of some scientific shortcomings, "*has done and still can do real service*", will find the indulgence and patronage of the Public.

We feel at last much indebted to the Oriental Printing-Office of W. DRUGULIN for the excellent getting up and carrying through of this volume.

M. & Co.

RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

PART FIRST

LEXICOLOGY.

- I.—THIS *Russian Grammar* is divided into four Division. parts, viz:
- I. *Lexicology* (словопроизведѣніе), or words considered as sounds of the human voice and as the elements of speech.
 - II. *Syntax* (словосочинѣніе), or agreement and construction of words in sentences.
 - III. *Orthography* (правописаніе), or the proper use of letters to represent words.
 - IV. *Prosody* (слоγοударѣніе), or *Orthoepy* (праворѣчіе), i. e. the manner of uttering words with regard to their accentuation.

Sounds
or Letters.

2.—It being the especial province of this science to explain every thing concerning the knowledge of words, it considers these first of all as mere sounds, and afterwards as the elements of speech. In respect then to mere sounds, words are composed of *letters* (бѹквы); and a collection of these letters or signs representing the particular sounds of which the words of a language are composed, is called *Alphabet* (азбука).

Alphabet.

3.—The Russian Alphabet now in use contains 36 letters, the roman and italic *types* of which, as used in printing, also the *caligraphic characters* or hand-writing, with their modern and ancient *appellation*, and their corresponding *value* of sound, are represented in the following table.

The Russian Alphabet is borrowed from the ecclesiastical Slavonic, which besides contains the following eight letters:





































Ѕ Ѣ Ѡ ѡ Ѣ Ѥ Ѧ

called зѣмѡ, уѣѡ, ѡтѣ, юѣѡ, ѡ, я, кѣѡ, пѣѡ for which now
are substituted з, у, ѡт, ю, ѡ, я, кѣ, пѣ.

The letter Ѧ has hitherto not been comprised among the number of the letters of the Alphabet; for which reason it is placed at the end of it.—Russian printers have for some time now pretty generally substituted the small capital т for the common ѡ, and this т we have made use of, both in this Grammar and in our Dictionary.

RUSSIAN ALPHABET.

Types.	Caligraphic characters.		Appellation.		Value.	
	<i>roman. italic.</i>	<i>Running-hand.</i>	<i>Round-hand.</i>	<i>ancient. modern.</i>	<i>Proper sound.</i>	<i>Accidental sound.</i>
1. А а	<i>A a</i>	<i>А а</i>	<i>А а α</i>	азъ а	а	е о (<i>far</i>) (<i>met</i>) (<i>no</i>)
2. Б б	<i>Б б</i>	<i>Б б</i>	<i>Б б</i>	бѹки бе	б	р
3. В в	<i>В в</i>	<i>В в</i>	<i>В в</i>	вѣди ве	в	ф
4. Г г	<i>Г г</i>	<i>Г г</i>	<i>Г г</i>	глаго́ль ге	г, gh; k, h, kh, v	
5. Д д	<i>Д д</i>	<i>Д д</i>	<i>Д д</i>	добро́ де	д	т
6. Е е	<i>Е е</i>	<i>Е е</i>	<i>Е е ѿ</i>	есть е	ѹа, а (<i>in yate,</i> <i>gate</i>)	ѹо, ѹо (<i>in yoke,</i> <i>no</i>)
7. Ж ж	<i>Ж ж</i>	<i>Ж ж</i>	<i>Ж ж</i>	живѣте же	zsh	sh
8. З з	<i>З з</i>	<i>З з</i>	<i>З з</i>	земля́ зе	z	s
9. И и	<i>И и</i>	<i>И и</i>	<i>И и ѿ</i>	и́же и	ee, i	ye (<i>in pin</i>).
10. І і	<i>І і</i>	<i>І і</i>	<i>І і</i>	і (<i>десятеричное</i>)	ee, i	(<i>in pin</i>)
11. К к	<i>К к</i>	<i>К к</i>	<i>К к</i>	ка́ко ка	k	gh, kh
12. Л л	<i>Л л</i>	<i>Л л</i>	<i>Л л</i>	лю́ди эль	l, ll	
13. М м	<i>М м</i>	<i>М м</i>	<i>М м</i>	мыслѣте э́мь	m	
14. Н н	<i>Н н</i>	<i>Н н</i>	<i>Н н</i>	нашъ э́нь	n	
15. О о	<i>О о</i>	<i>О о</i>	<i>О о</i>	онъ о	ō	a (<i>in far</i>)
16. П п	<i>П п</i>	<i>П п</i>	<i>П п</i>	поко́й пе	p	
17. Р р	<i>Р р</i>	<i>Р р</i>	<i>Р р</i>	рцы э́рь	r	
18. С с	<i>С с</i>	<i>С с</i>	<i>С с</i>	сло́во э́сь	s, ss	z

Types.		Caligraphic characters.		Appellation.		Value.	
<i>roman.</i>	<i>italic.</i>	<i>Round-hand.</i>	<i>Running-hand.</i>	<i>ancient.</i>	<i>modern.</i>	<i>Proper sound.</i>	<i>Accidental sound.</i>
19. Т т	T t			твёрдо	те	t	d
20. У у	U u			у	у	oo, u	(in tub)
21. Ф ф	F f			фертъ	эфъ	f, ph	
22. Х х	X x			хѣръ	ха	kh, ch	
23. Ц ц	C c			цы	це	ts	
24. Ч ч	Ch ch			червь	че	ch, tsh	sh
25. Ш ш	Sh sh				ша	sh	
26. Щ щ	Shch shch				ща	sh-tsh	sh
27. Ъ ъ	Shch shch			ѣръ		e	<i>mute</i>
28. Ы ы	Y y			ѣры		e	<i>thick we</i>
29. Ь ь	Y y			ѣрь		y	<i>mute</i>
30. Ъ ъ	Shch shch			ятъ		yah, ā	yo
31. Э э	E e			э		e	(in met)
32. Ю ю	Yu yu			ю		you	u Fr.
33. Я я	Ya ya			я		ya	ye, e (in yard) (in yet, met)
34. Ѳ ѳ	Th th			ѳта		f	
35. Ѳ ѳ	Th th			ижица		ee, i	(in pin)
36. Ѳ ѳ	Th th			и съкраткой		y	<i>mute</i>

RUSSIAN WRITTEN ALPHABET.

А. Аа М. м н. нн Ш. Шш
 Ё. Ёё Ъ. Ъъ Н. Нн Щ. Щщ
 В. Вв О. Оо Л. Лл
 Т. Тт К. Кк П. Пп Ъ. Ъъ
 Д. Дд Р. Рр Ъ. Ъъ
 Е. Ее С. Сс Ъ. Ъъ
 Ж. Жж М. Мм Ъ. Ъъ
 З. Зз У. Уу Ю. Юю
 И. Ии Ф. Фф Я. Яя
 Г. Гг Х. Хх О. Оо
 К. Кк Ц. Цц Ч. Чч
 Л. Лл Ъ. Ъъ Ъ. Ъъ

Языкъ Русскій, будучи управляемъ Дарова-
 —немъ и вкусомъ Писателя умнаго, мо-
 жетъ равняться нынѣ въ силѣ красноты
 и пріятности съ лучшими языками
 древности и нашихъ временъ.

Division of
the letters.

4.—The 36 letters of the Russian alphabet contain 12 *vowels* (гласныя), viz: а, е, и, о, у, ы, ъ, э, ю, я, ѳ, of which the following five: е, ѳ, я, ю, ы, may be called *diphthongs* (двугласныя); 3 *semi-vowels* (полугласныя): ъ, ь, ѱ, and 21 *consonants* (согласныя), viz: б, в, г, д, ж, з, к, л, м, н, п, р, с, т, ф, х, ц, ч, ш, щ, ѱ, ѳ.

5.—The vowels and semi-vowels, with regard to their sounds, are *hard*, *soft* or *moderate*; and the consonants, according to their degree of intensity, are *strong*, *feeble* or *liquid*, viz:

I. VOWELS.		III. CONSONANTS.	
I. <i>Hard</i> :	{and those corresponding:}	I. <i>Strong</i> :	{and those corresponding:}
а	я	п	б
э	е	ф	в
ы	ѱ, і	к	г (<i>g lat.</i>)
о	ѳ (іо)	х	г (<i>h lat.</i>)
у	ю	ш	ж
		т	д
		с	з
		ц (тс) . (дз)	These three have no sign of their own.
		ч (тш) . (дж)	
		щ (штш) (ждж)	
			3. <i>Liquid</i> .
			л, м, н, р.

6.—According to the particular organ of speech which gives utterance to the consonants, they are divided into:

1. *Gutturals* (гортанныя), pronounced in the throat:
г, к, х.
2. *Palatals* (поднёбныя), uttered by the palate:
л, н, р.
3. *Dentals* (зубныя), sounded by the aid of and against the teeth: д, т.

4. *Lingual* (язычная), articulated by means of applying the tongue closely to the upper teeth: ц.
5. *Labials* (губныя), produced between the lips: б, в, м, п, ф.
6. *Lispings* (шепелеватыя), produced by a whistling of the tongue against the palate: з, с.
7. *Hissings* (шипящія), sounded by a whistling of the tongue against the root of the lower teeth: ж, ч, ш, щ.

The vowel *у* and the consonant *ѳ* have not been included in the divisions, being found only in a few words taken from the Greek, and the former, with regard to pronunciation, being identical with *и*, and the latter with *ѱ*.

7.—In the foregoing table of the letters we have pointed out their *proper* and *accidental sounds*; the proper sound being the one they usually have, or when used separately, whereas they receive their accidental sound from a particular situation. This accidental sound, and more especially with regard to the vowels, depends upon the *tonic accent* (ударѣніе), of which more hereafter (§ 12).

Pronunciation of the letters.

The rules we are about to give of the pronunciation of the Russian letters, are taken from the dialect of Great-Russia, such as it is spoken at the Court, among the polished and literary world. Other dialects of the Russian tongue are those of Little-Russia, White-Russia, Novgorod, Soozdal and that of Olonetz; all of which however differ not more materially from the Moscovite dialect, than by their pronunciation and the use of some particular expressions.

8.—The vowels, in the Russian language, are differently pronounced according to the place they occupy in a word, or as they are accented or not.

Vowels.

А, а.	Proper sound,	{ a (in <i>far</i>): áзбука, <i>alphabet</i> ; кáша, <i>oat-meal</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ e (in <i>pen</i>): ўжасть, <i>dread</i> ; часы́, <i>watch</i> ; лóшадь, <i>horse</i> . o (in <i>go</i>): большáго, <i>great</i> ; ху-дáго, <i>bad</i> .

This vowel *a* is pronounced as *ah* or *a* (in *fat*); but: 1) It has the sound of short *e* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ) in the middle of a word, when not accented; at the end of words however, whether accented or not, it retains its proper sound.—2) In the termination *aro* of the genitive of adjectives, when accented, it has the sound of long *o*. Thus the above words are pronounced: àhzbooka, kàhsha, oòzshess, tshesseè, lòhshad, bahlshòhva, khudòhva.

Я, я.	Proper sound,	{ ya (in <i>yard</i>): я́ма, <i>ditch</i> : мя́со, <i>meat</i> ; земл́я, <i>earth</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ ye, e (in <i>yet</i>): ядрó, <i>kernel</i> ; де-вять, <i>nine</i> .

The vowel *я*, when accented, has the sound of the diphthong *yah* (*yàhma*, *myàhso*, *zèmyah*); but if not accented, it is pronounced *ye* (in *yap*) at the beginning of words and syllables, and *e* (in *get*) after a consonant (*yadrò*, *dàvet*). At the end of words, whether accented or not, it preserves its proper sound; thus за́ря, *dawn*; вре́мя, *time*, are pronounced zaryàh, vramyah. The pronoun ея́, *of her*, is pronounced yayòh, and the syllable ся of pronominal verbs is pronounced sah as: старáться, *to exert one's self* (stahràhtsah).

Е, е.	Proper sound,	{ ya, a (in <i>yate, gate</i>) еди́нь, <i>one</i> ; сié, <i>this</i> ; сёрдце, <i>heart</i> .
	Accidental sound,	{ yo, o (in <i>yoke</i>): берёза, <i>birch-tree</i> ; жёлтый, <i>yellow</i> .

At the beginning of words and syllables the vowel *e* is pronounced *yai*, but after a consonant purely as long *a* or short *e*; the above words therefore are pronounced *yaidèen*, *seeyaèe*, *sàirtse*. This vowel, when accented, sounds like *yo* (in *yoke*), or, after a hissing and the lingual consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ, ц), like *oh* in the following cases, viz: 1) when standing before a consonant followed by one of the hard vowels, *a*, *o*, *y*, *u*, *ø*; 2) at the end of words; 3) in the termination *ею* or *еў* of the instrumental singular case of feminine nouns; 4) before the gutturals (г, к, х) or the simple hissing sounds (ж, ш), which do not allow of a hard vowel after them; 5) in the present tense of verbs, although followed by a soft vowel. Thus the words *ёлка*, *fir*; *слёзы*, *tears*; *ледъ*, *ice*; *жизнь*, *life*; *моё*, *my*; *землёю*, *by the earth*; *далёкій*, *distant*; *несёшь*, *thou carriest*; *несёте*, *you carry*; *шелкъ*, *silk*; *лицё*, *face*; *душёю*, *with the soul*, are pronounced *yòlka*, *shyòzee*, *lyot*, *zsheetyò*, *mah-yò*, *zamyòyou*, *dalyòkee*, *nessyòsh*, *nessyòtai*, *shòlk*, *leetsò*, *dooshòyou*. It is this pronunciation *yo* or *o* that it is customary now to point out by a diæresis over the vowel *e*; *берёза*, *жёлтый*, *ёлка*, &c., and in this manner it has been distinguished, throughout this Grammar. This vowel *ë* serves besides to give the French pronunciation of *eu*, as in *Монтеस्कьё* (*Fr. Montesquieu*).

Б, Ё.	{	Proper sound,	{	ya, a (in <i>yate</i> , <i>gate</i>): <i>ѢМЪ</i> , <i>I eat</i> ; <i>вѢра</i>, <i>faith</i>.
		Accidental sound,	{	yo (in <i>yoke</i>): <i>гнѣзда</i> , <i>nests</i> ; <i>звѣзды</i> , <i>stars</i>.

This vowel *u* at the beginning of words and syllables sounds like *yai*; but after a consonant like long *a* or short *e* (*yaim*, *vàira*). However after the consonant *u*

the diphthongal sound is felt rather stronger; thus нѣтъ, *no*; нѣмóй, *dumb*, are pronounced *nyet*, *nyamòy*. When accented, this vowel has the sound of *yoh* only in the words гнѣзда, *nests*; звѣзды, *stars*; сѣдла, *saddles*; цвѣлъ, *he flourished*; обрѣлъ, *he found*; also in their derivatives and compounds, as: звѣздочка, *little star*; гнѣздышко, *little nest*; разцвѣлъ, *it bloomed*; which are pronounced *gnyòzhzda*, *zvyòzhzdee*, *syòhdla*, *tsvyòll*, *ahbryòll*, *zvyòzhzdotshka*, *gnyòzhzdishko*, *rahztsvyòll*.

О, о. { Proper sound, о: дóма, *at home*; пóслъ, *after*.
Accidental sound, ah: хорошó, *well*; колоколá, *bells*.

The vowel *o*, when accented, keeps its proper sound; but if unaccented, it takes the sound of *ah*; wherefore the above words are pronounced *dòma*, *pòslai*, *kharahshòh*, *kalakalàh*. It must be observed however, that after an accented syllable, the sound of that vowel is extremely short; thus the word кóлоколъ, *bell*, is pronounced *kòhlokol* or *kòhl'k'l*.

И, и. { Proper sound, ee: итíи, *to go*; миръ, *peace*.
Accidental sound, yee: имъ, *to them*; статíи, *articles*.

The vowel *u*, at the beginning of the various inflections of the pronoun of the third person (имъ, ихъ, íми), and after the semi-vowel *b*, is pronounced as a diphthong, *yeem*, *yeèmee*, *yeekh*, *stahtyèè*. But in every other instance it preserves its proper sound, only that after a preposition terminating with the semi-vowel *ъ*, it takes the thick sound of *ы*, thus the words въ избѣ, *in the room*; съ Иваномъ, *with John*; предыдúщíи, *precedent*, are pronounced as if written *вызбѣ*, *сыва́номъ*, *предыды́щíи*.

Ы, ы. { Proper sound, e thick: сынъ, *son*; льстецы́, *flatterers*.
Accidental sound, we: гри́бы, *mushrooms*; мы, *we*.

The sound of this vowel *u* is a thick utterance of *e*, and to get any thing like a perfect idea of this sound, it is necessary to hear it from the mouth of a Russian. After the labials (б, в, м, п, ф) it sounds very nearly like *we* pronounced very short; thus the words грибы, *mushrooms*; вы, *you*; мы, *we*; снопы, *sheaves*; шкафы, *cupboards*, are pronounced *grebwè, vwe, mwe, snapwè, sh'kafwè*. The Polish language represents this sound by the letter *y*.

Ю, ю. { Proper sound, you, long *u*: югъ, *south*; люблю, *I love*.
 { Accidental sound, u French: Брюссель, *Brussels*.

This vowel *ю* has properly the diphthongal sound *you* or long *u*; wherefore the pronunciation of the above words is *youk, lyoublyou*. In foreign words only it takes the place of the French *u*, as in the word Брюссель, *Brussels* (Fr. *Bruxelles*.)

И, и, У, у, Э, э, В, в.—These four vowels, whether accented or not, always keep their proper sound, as in the words иерей, *priest*; миръ, *the world*; ужинъ, *supper*; пагуба, *loss*; этоъ, *this*; мѣро, *holy chrism*, which are pronounced *yerèy, meer, oòzsheen, pàhgoobah, àttot, meèro*. For the use of *i* and *v* (instead of *u*) see Orthography.

9.—The semi-vowels (ѣ, ъ, и), which are placed, Semi-vowels. the two first after the consonants, and the last after the vowels, are only half uttered vowels, *э* being half of the vowel *o*, and *ѣ* or *ѭ* half of the vowel *u*.

Ѣ, ѣ, Ъ, ѣ.—The hard semi-vowel *э* entails on the consonant that precedes it, a strong and harsh sound, as though that letter was double, and has even the effect of causing a feeble consonant to be pronounced like its strong corresponding sound;

thus the words: *станъ*, *shape*; *вязъ*, *elm-tree*; *шесть*, *perch*; *кровъ*, *roof*; *столь*, *table*; *братъ*, *brother*; *пыль*, *flame*; *гусáръ*, *hussar*; *объ*, *from*; *гладъ*, *hunger*; *семъ*, *this*; *цѣпъ*, *flail*, are pronounced *stann*, *vyass*, *shesst*, *krohff*, *stoll*, *brahtt*, *peel*, *goosàrr*, *ohpp*, *glahtt*, *semm*, *tsepp*. On the other hand, the soft semi-vowel *ь* confers a liquifying (*Fr. mouillé*) and slender sound on the preceding consonant; thus the words: *станъ*, *become*, *вязъ*, *marsh*; *шесть*, *six*; *кровъ*, *blood*; *столь*, *so much*; *братъ*, *to take*; *пыль*, *dust*; *гусáръ*, *goose-herd*; *Объ*, *the Obi*; *гладъ*, *smoth road*; *семъ*, *seven*; *цѣпъ*, *chain*, are pronounced *stahnⁱ* (like *gn* in the French *Allemagne*), *vyazⁱ*, *shesstⁱ*, *krovⁱ*, *stohlⁱ*, *brahtⁱ*, *peelⁱ*, *goosàrⁱ*, *ohbⁱ*, *glàdⁱ*, *semⁱ*, *tsepⁱ*, by causing the *i* to be slightly vibrated and to expire, as it were, within the mouth; the sound and the mechanism for producing it, being closely allied to what is heard in the French words *péril*, *soleil*, *campagne*, *cigogne*, *ligne*. After the hissing consonants (*ж, ч, ш, щ*) the sounds of the semi-vowels *ъ* and *ь* are the same and differ in nothing from each other; thus the words *ножъ*, *knife*, and *рожъ*, *rye*; *мечъ*, *sword*, and *сѣчь*, *to cut*; *камышъ*, *reed*, and *мышъ*, *mouse*; *тощъ*, *fasting*, and *нощъ*, *night*, are pronounced *nohsh* and *rohsh*, *metch* and *setch*, *kahmeèsh* and *meesh*, *tohsh'tsh* and *nohsh'tsh*.

Ï, й.—The soft semi-vowel *ÿ* is pronounced very rapidly and short along with the vowel that precedes it, and with which it formes but one syllable; thus the words *дай*, *give*; *пей*, *drink*: *мой*, *my*; *жуй*, *chew*; *вѣй*, *blow*; *капй*, *brownbay*, are pro-

nounced *daⁱ*, or like *di* in *die*, *peⁱ*, *moⁱ*, *zshuⁱ*, *vaⁱ*, *kareeⁱ*, givin gutterance to a short *ĩ* after the vowel.

10.—The consonants, in the Russian language, Consonants. as will be seen below, have also various sounds, viz:

Б, б.	} Proper sound,	{	<i>b</i> : баба, <i>old woman</i> ; бобъ, <i>bean</i> ; бабка, <i>cockle</i> .
В, в.			<i>v</i> : вонъ, <i>away</i> ; ровъ, <i>ditch</i> ; вторникъ, <i>Tuesday</i> .
Д, д.			<i>d</i> : дно, <i>bottom</i> ; родъ, <i>kind</i> ; водка, <i>brandy</i> .
Ж, ж.			<i>zsh</i> : жду, <i>I wait</i> ; мужъ, <i>husband</i> ; ложка, <i>spoon</i> .
З, з.			<i>z</i> : звонъ, <i>sound</i> ; глазъ, <i>eye</i> ; сказка, <i>story</i> .

The feeble consonants б, в, д, ж, з, retain their proper sound before the vowels, before the liquid and other feeble consonants, observing that ж (French *j*) is now represented in English by *zsh*. But before the strong consonants and at the end of words terminating in the hard semi-vowel (ъ), they assume the utterance of their corresponding strong letters (п, ф, т, ш, ц). Thus the above words are pronounced *bàbah*, *bohph*, *bàpka*, *vohtm*, *rohff*, *ftòhrneek*, *dno*, *rott*, *vòhtkah*, *zsh'doo*, *moosh*, *òhshkah*, *zvonn*, *glahss*, *skàska*. In words where зð is followed by н, the letter ð is silent: thus. поздно, *late*; праздникъ, *feast*, are pronounced *pòhznò*, *pràhznèek*. The word дождикъ, *rain*, is pronounced *dòhzsh'zsheek*.

Г, г.	{	Proper sound, <i>g gh</i> : горá, <i>mountain</i> ; погибелъ, <i>perdition</i> .	
		{	<i>k</i> : другъ, <i>friend</i> ; мóгншй, <i>who could</i> .
			<i>h</i> : Господъ, <i>Lord</i> ; Бóга, <i>of God</i> .
			<i>kh</i> , <i>ch</i> : Богъ, <i>God</i> ; лёгкшй, <i>light</i> .
			<i>v</i> : краснаго, <i>red</i> ; егó, <i>of him</i> .

In the beginning and in the middle of words the consonant *z* preserves its proper sound, being articulated with a slight vocalized aspiration, something like the Hibernian *g* when pronounced hard (*gharàh*,

pahgheèbel). The accidental sound takes place in the following cases: 1) At the end of words and before the consonant *ш*, it takes the hard utterance of *к* (*drook, mòhkshe*).—In the words Госпóдь, *Lord*; блага, *well*, and the various inflections of the noun Богъ, *God* (Бóга, Бóгу, Бóгомъ) it is an aspirated (*hospòhd, blàho, bòhhah, bòhhoo, bòhhomh*).—3) In the words Богъ, *God*, and убо́гъ, *poor*; before a strong consonant, as лёгкíи, *light*; лёгче, *lighter*; нóгтí, *the nails*, and in the foreign words ending in *пз*, as Петербóургъ, *Petersburg*; Кенíгсбérгъ, *Königsberg*, it takes the hard guttural sound of *x* (Germ. *ch, boch, oobòch, lyòchkee, laichshai, nòchtee, paiterboòrch, kainigsbèrch*).—4) In inflections аго, яго, ого, его, of adjectives and pronouns, it is pronounced as *v* (*kràsnakhvah, yaivòh*).—5) In words derived from foreign languages, it is pronounced either *g* or aspirated *h*, according to the original sound which it is intended to supply, as in the words геогрáфия, *geography*; гóбérнiя, *government*; герóй, *hero*; госпíтáль, *hospital*.

К, к.	{	Proper sound, <i>k</i> : крестъ, <i>cross</i> ; зéркало, <i>mirror</i> .
		Accidental sound, { <i>gh</i> : къ Бóгу, <i>to God</i> ; къ землѣ, <i>to the earth</i> . <i>kh, ch</i> : кто, <i>who</i> ; къ кому́, <i>to whom</i> .

The consonant *к* when placed before the feeble consonants б, г, д, ж, з, takes the sound of its corresponding feeble *z* (*gh' bòhoo, gh' zàimlai*), and before the consonants к, т, ч, it takes the articulation of *x* (*khto, kh'kahmoò*). In every other instance it preserves its proper sound (*kresst, zàirkahlo*).

С, с. { Proper sound, *s*: сестра́, *sister*; соса́ние, *suction*.
 Accidental sound, { *z*: съ Богомъ, *with God*; сзыва́ть,
to invite.

Т, т. { Proper sound: *t*: тетива́, *bow-string*; тётка, *aunt*.
 Accidental sound, { *d*: отда́ть, *to give back*; жени́тьба,
marriage.

The strong consonants *c* and *m* before the feeble *б*, *г*, *д*, *ж*, *з*, assume the articulation of their corresponding feeble consonants *з* and *д*; thus the words above are pronounced *sesstrà*, *sahsàniyai*, *z'bòhhom*, *zzeevàti*, *teteevà*, *tyòhtkah*, *ahddàti*, *zsheneèdba*. When *cm* is followed by *н*, the consonant *ш* is not at all sounded, as in the words по́стный, *of lent*; ча́стный, *partial*, pronounced *pòhsnee*, *tshàsnee*. The consonant *c*, before the strong hissing sounds *ш* and *ч*, takes the utterance of *ш*; thus сшива́ть, *to sew*; сча́стие, *happiness*, are pronounced *sh'sheevàti*, *sh'tshàstiyai*.

Ч, ч. { Proper sound, *ch* or *tsh*: часъ, *hour*; чéпчикъ, *a cap*.
 Accidental sound, *sh*: что, *what*; наро́чно, *on purpose*.

The compound consonant *ч* (тш), which is pronounced the same as the English digraph *ch*, takes the simple sound of *ш*, or English *sh*, in the word что, and before the consonant *н*; thus we pronounce the above words *tshas*, *tsheptsheek*, *sh'toh*, *nahròhshno*. However the word то́чно, *precisely*, is pronounced *tòhtshno*, to distinguish it from то́шно, *I feel sick*, which is pronounced *tòhshno*. The Poles represent this letter by *cz*.

Ш, ш. { Proper sound, *sh**tsh*: щитъ, *shield*; о́воцъ, *fruit*.
 Accidental sound, { *sh*: о́вощной, *of fruit*; помо́щникъ,
helper.

The compound consonant *ш* (штш), which has the three distinct sounds of *sh-t-sh* or *s-t-sh*, and which the Poles represent by *szcz*, has the simple sound of *ш* before the consonant *н*; the above words consequently are pronounced *sh'tshitt*, or *stchitt*, *òhvosh'tsh*, and *ahvahshnòy*, *pahmòhshnik*.

П, п.	}	. . . . .	{	павлѣнъ, <i>pea-cock</i> ; столпъ, <i>column</i> .
Ф, ф.				<i>f</i> or <i>ph</i> : фонарь, <i>lantern</i> ; скуфья, <i>scull-cap</i> .
Х, х.	}	. . . . .	{	<i>kh</i> , Germ. <i>ch</i> : храмъ, <i>temple</i> ; духъ, <i>odour</i> .
Ш, ш.				Proper sound, { <i>sh</i> , Fr. <i>ch</i> , Germ. <i>sch</i> , Pol. <i>sz</i> : шалашъ, <i>cottage</i> .
Ц, ц.	}	. . . . .	{	<i>ts</i> , Germ. <i>z</i> : царь, <i>king</i> ; перецъ, <i>pepper</i> .
Ө, о.				<i>f</i> : театръ, <i>theatre</i> ; Аѳѣны, <i>Athens</i> .

Thesesix strong consonants keep their proper sound, and consequently the above words are pronounced *pa-vleèn*, *stohlþ*, *fahnàr*, *schoofyà*, *khrahmm*, *dookh*, *shah-làsh*, *tsar*, *pàhrets*, *fe-àht'r*, *afeènée*, observing that *x* is pronounced as in the Scotch *loch* or German *Dach*. For the use of the consonant *ө*, which is pronounced the same as *ф*, see Orthography.

Л, л.	}	. . . . .	{	<i>l</i> : ладъ, <i>accord</i> ; лядъ, <i>ill-luck</i> .
М, м.				<i>m</i> : всемъ, <i>to all</i> ; восемь, <i>eight</i> .
Н, н.	}	. . . . .	{	<i>n</i> : тронъ, <i>throne</i> ; тронъ, <i>touch</i> .
Р, р.				<i>r</i> : радъ, <i>glad</i> ; рядъ, <i>rank</i> .

The liquid consonants preserve their proper sound, being strong or soft in their utterance according to the vowel or semi-vowel that follows; consequently the above words are pronounced *latt* and *lyat*, *vsaimm* and *vòhsem*; *trohnn* and *tron'i*; *rahтт* and *ryahтт*. It is necessary to observe here that the Russian consonant *л*, before the hard vowels and strong con-

sonants, by no means resembles the usual English *l*, in as much as in that situation it is pronounced with much greater force, and which is obtained by a strong pressure of the tongue against the upper teeth. The Poles represent this sound by *l* with a bar (*ł*). The other three sounds correspond with those of the English language, only that the *p* has a stronger trill, partaking more of the Irish utterance of this letter.

11.—A vowel, either by itself, or joined to one or more consonants, with or without a semi-vowel, forms, in the Russian language, a *syllable* (слогъ, складъ); and one or several of these, used to represent a thought or sensation, form a word (сло́во). Words consequently may be *monosyllables* (одно-сло́жныя) or *polysyllables* (многосло́жныя), according to their being compounded of one or more syllables, as: *н*, *and*; *я*, *I*; *онъ*, *he*; *ай*, *ah*; *сей*, *this*; *два*, *two*; *страхъ*, *fright*; *зи-ма́*, *winter*; *до-ро́-га*, *road*; *до-бро-дѣ-тель*, *virtue*; *до-бро-дѣ-тель-ный*, *virtuous*, &c.

Syllables
and words.

The Russian language contains a few words that have no vowel at all, or whose vowel has changed into a semi-vowel; such are the particles *въ*, *къ*, *съ*, *бъ*, *жъ*, *ль* (instead of *во*, *ко*, *со*, *бы*, *же*, *ли*). These words, called *assyllabics* (безсло́жныя), are joined to the syllables of the preceding or following word, as: *въ домъ*, *in the house*; *къ окнѣ*, *towards the window*; *съ тобою*, *with thee*; *если бѣ*, *if*; *одна́ко жѣ*, *however*; *то́чно ль*, *is it right so?*

12.—In polysyllabic words there is always one syllable that experiences a greater stress of the voice than the rest; thus in the words *мáло*, *little*; *го-то́во*, *ready*; *говори́те*, *speak*, the syllables *ма*, *то*, *ри*, are more discernably audible than the syllables

Tonic
accent.

10, 20, 60, *me*. This modification of the voice is in fact what is meant by *tonic accent* (ударѣніе), and is indicated by a little mark over the vowel. The accented syllable is called *long* (дóлгий), the others *short* (крáткіе).

The accent is no longer printed in Russian books, except to distinguish some homonymous words and grammatical inflections of similar forms, as зáмокъ, *castle*, and замóкъ, *lock*; слóва, *of the word* (gen. sing.), and словá, *words* (nomin. plur.), as will be seen in Part IV, Prosody. It is here the place to observe that in the Russian language there is no rule by which to determine the accent, and that in one and the same word it is frequently shifted from one syllable to another; for which reason all the words used in this Grammar are printed with the accent they ought to have.

The following *Reading-exercise*, in which the reading of the Russian text is facilitated by an imitation of the sounds according to English utterance, and an interlinear literal translation added, it is confidentially hoped, will materially assist the learner to make himself master of the rules we have given on the pronunciation of the letters and words of the Russian language.

READING-EXERCISE.

Вчерá	въ	шесть	часóвъ	ýтра	по́ехали	мы
Ftsherà	f'	shest	tshessóff	oòtra	pah-yaikhalee	mwe
Yesterday	at	six	o'clock	of the morning	went	we

вѣрхóмъ	въ	Пóтсдамъ.	Ничегó	нѣтъ	скучнѣе	этой
verkhómm	f'	Pòtsdam.	Neetshaivò	nyet	skeeshnaiyai	aitoy
on horseback	to	Potsdam.	Nothing	there is	duller	than this

дорóги:	вездѣ	глубóкій	песóкъ,	и	ни	какіхъ	занимáтель-
dahròghee:	vezdai	gloobòhkee	pessòk,	ee	neekahkeekh	zaneemàhtel-	
road:	every where	a deep	sand,	and not	any	interest-	

ныхъ	предмѣтовъ	въ	глазá	не	попада́ется.	Но	видѣ
neekh	praidmátoff	v'	glahzàh	nai	pahpahdàyetsah.	No	veet
ing	object	to	the eyes	not	presents itself.	But	the sight

Потсдама, а особливо Санъ-Суси, очень хорошъ. Мы
 Pòtsdahmah, ah ahsahbleëvo San-Soosée, òtshain kharòsh. Mwe
of Potsdam, and above all of Sans-Souci, (is) very fine. We

остановились въ трактиръ, не дозжая до городскихъ воротъ.
 ahstahnahveëles f' trakteèrai, nai da-yaizsh 'zshàyah da garadskeèkh vahràt.
stopped at the hotel, not arriving to the city-gates.

Отдохнувъ и заказавъ обѣдъ, мы пошли въ
 Addakhnoòv ee zakazàhv ahbyaid, mwe pashlèè v'
Having rested ourselves and ordered a dinner, we went into

городъ. У воротъ записали наши имена. На парадномъ
 gòrot. oo varòt zahpeesàhlee nàshee eemainàh. Nah paràhndnom
the town. At the gates one wrote our names. On the parade-

мѣстѣ противъ дворца, училась гвардія: прекрасные
 maistai pròhteef dvahrtsàh, ootsheèlahs gvàhrdyah: praikràhsneeyai
place opposite the palace, exercised the guards: very fine

люди, прекрасные мундіры! Видъ дворца со
 lyòudee, praikràhsneeyai moondeèree! Veed dvahrtsàh sah
men, superb uniforms! The sight of the palace from

стороны сада очень хорошъ. Городъ, вообще
 starahneè sàhda òtshain kharòsh. Ghòrod vah-ahbstshai
the side of the garden (is) very fine. The town in general

прекрасно выстроено; въ большой улицѣ много
 praikràhsno vwèstroyain; v' bahlshòy oòleetsai mnògo
(is) well built; in the great street (there are) many

великолепныхъ домовъ, строенныхъ отчасти по образцу
 vaileekahlaipneekh dahmòf, stròyainneekh attshàhstee pah ahbrahtsoò
of magnificent houses, built partly on the model

огромнѣйшихъ римскихъ палатъ и на собственные деньги
 agròmneysheekh reèmskeekh pahlàht ee na sòbstvainneeyah dèynghee
of the vastest Roman palaces and at the own expences

покойнаго короля: онъ дарилъ ихъ, кому хотѣлъ. Теперъ
 pakòynahvah kahralyàh: on dareèl yeekh, kamoò khahtail. Taipèr
of the late king: he gave them, to whom he chose. Now

сѣи огромныя зданія пусты, или занимаются
seeeyè agròmneeyah zdáhneeyah poósteè, eelee zaneemähyootsah
the vast edifices (are) empty, or are occupied

солдатами. — Въ Потсдамѣ есть русская церковь подъ
sahldáhtamee. — F' Pòtsdahmai yest roòskayah tsairkov pahd
by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under

надзира́ніемъ стараго русскаго солдата, который живётъ
nahdzeeráhneeyem stàrahvah roòskahvah sahldàtah, kahtòree zsheev'yòtt
the care of an old Russian soldier, who lives

тамъ со времёнъ царствованія Императрицы Анны. Мы
tahm sah vraimain tsàrstvovaneeyah eemperatreètsee àhnnee. Mwe
there since the times of the reign of the empress Anne. We

насилу могли сыскать его. Дряхлый старикъ
nahseèloo maghleè seeskàht yaivò. Dr'yàkhlee stahreèk
with difficulty could find him. The decrepit old man

сидѣлъ на большихъ креслахъ, и услышавъ, что
seedail na bahlsheèkh krèslahkh, ee oosleèshahv shto
was sitting in a large arm-chair, and having heard that

мы Русскіе, протянулъ къ намъ руки, и
mwe roòskeeyai, prahtyahnoòl k' nahm roòkee, ee
we (are) Russians, he extended towards us the hands, and

дрожáщимъ го́лосомъ сказа́лъ: Сла́ва Бо́гу! Сла́ва Бо́гу!
drahzhshàtsheem gòlossom skahzàhl: slàvah Bòhoo! slàvah Bòhoo!
with a trembling voice he said: Glory to God! Glory to God!

Онъ хотѣлъ говорить сперва съ нами по-русски: но мы
ohn khahtail gahvahreèt spervàh s' nàhmeè pah-roòsskee: no mwe
He wanted to speak at first with us in Russian: but we

съ трудомъ могли разумѣть другъ друга. Намъ надлежало
s' troodòm mahgleè rahzoomait droog droògah. Nam nahdlaizshàhlo
with difficulty could understand each other. To us it was obliged

повторять почти каждое слово. „Пойдѣмте въ церковь
pahvtahryàht pahtshtèè kàzshdoyai slòvo. „Pie-dyòmtai f' tsairkov
to repeat almost each word. „Let us go into the church

Божію, сказáлъ онъ, и помóлимся вмѣстѣ, хотя нынѣ
 Bòzsheeyou, skahzàhl on, ee pahmòhleemsa vmaistai, khahtyàh neènai
of God, said he, and let us pray together, although to-day

и нѣтъ ^{gen} прázдника.“ Сѣрдце моё напóлнилось
 ee n'yet prázneekah.“ Sairtse mah-yòh napòhlnelos
even there is not any holiday.“ Heart my filled itself

благóговѣніемъ, когдá отворíлась дверь въ цѣрковь,
 blahahghavaineeyam, kaghdà ahtvareèlas dvair f' tsairkov,
with devotion, when opened itself the door into the church,

гдѣ стóлько врѣмени цáрствуетъ глубóкое молчáніе,
 ghdyai stòlko vraimainee tsàrstvooyet gloobókoyai mahlts hàneeyai,
where so much of time reigns a profound silence,

едвá перерывáемое слáбыми вздóхами и тѣхнмъ гóлосомъ
 yaidvàh perereevâyaimoyai slàhbemee vzdòhkhahmee ee teèkheem ghòlossom
hardly interrupted by the feeble groans and the soft voice

стáрца, котóрый по воскресѣньямъ прихóдитъ тудá читáть
 stàrtsah, kahtòhree pah vahskraisainyahm preekhòhdeet toodàh tsheetàht
of old man, who on the sundays comes there to read

святѣйшую изъ книгъ, пригото́вляющую егó къ
 svyàhtèyshooyou eez kneegh, preegahtahvlyayoustshooyou yaivòh k'
the most holy of the books, preparing him to

блaжéнной вѣчнóсти. Въ цѣркви всё чíсто. Цѣркóвныя
 blahzshainnoy vaitshnostee. F' tsairkvee fsyo tsheesto. Tsairkòvneeyah
the happy eternity. In the church all (is) clean. Church-

кнѣги и ўтварь храня́тся въ сундукѣ. Отъ врѣмени до
 kneèghee ee oòtvahr khrahnyàtsah f' soondookai. Aht vraimenee doh
books and ornaments are kept in a trunk. From time to

врѣмени старíкъ перебира́етъ ихъ съ молíтвою. „Чáсто
 vraimainee stahreèk perebeeràyait yeekh s' mahleètvooyou. „Tshàsto
time the old man arranges them with prayer. „Often

отъ всегó сѣрдца, сказáлъ онъ, сокрушáюсь я о томъ, что
 aht fsaivò sairtsah, skahzàhl on, sahkhrooshàyouy yah ah tomm, shto
from all the heart, said he, grieve myself I of that, that

по смѣрти моѣй, котóрая отъ меня конѣчно ужé не
 pah smairtee mah-yèy, kahtórayah aht mainyàh kahnaishno oozshai nai
after death my, which from me certainly already not (is)

далёко, нé кому бóдетъ смотрѣть за цѣрковью.“ — Съ
 dahlyòhko, nai kahmoo boòdait smahtrait zah tsairkovyuu.“ — S'
far, no person will watch over the church.“ — During

полчасá прóбыли мы въ семъ свящénномъ мѣстѣ,
 poltshahsà pròbwelee mwe f' saim svyahststshainnom maistai,
half an hour remained we in this holy spot,

простѣлись съ почтѣннымъ старикóмъ, и пожела́ли ему́
 prahsteèles s' pahsthtainneem stahreekòm, ee pahzshailàlee yaimòò
bade farewell with the venerable old man, and wished him

тѣхой смѣрти.
 tèekhoy smairtee.
an easy death.

Карамзѣнъ.
 Kahrakhmzeèn.

Elements
 of speech.

13.—Words, when considered as the elements of speech, are either *denominative* (знаменáтельные) or *auxiliary* (служебныя). The former express the idea of objects, of their qualities or actions; the latter merely design the connexion that exists among the denominative words; thus in this phrase: Пти́цы летáютъ по вóздуху, а рýбы живýтъ въ водѣ, *birds fly in the air, and fishes live in water*, the denominative words are: *пти́цы, летáютъ, вóздуху, рýбы, живýтъ, водѣ*, and the auxiliary words are: *по, а, въ*. The former are called the *parts* (ча́сти), and the latter the *particles of speech* (части́цы рѣчи). The parts and particles of speech, in the Russian language, may be brought under nine different heads; namely:

I. PARTS OF SPEECH:

1. The *substantive* (имѣя существительное).
2. The *adjective* (имѣя прилагательное).
3. The *pronoun* (мѣстоимѣніе).
4. The *verb* (глаголь).
5. The *participle* (причастіе).
6. The *adverb* (нарѣчіе) and the *gerund* (дѣепричастіе).

II. PARTICLES OF SPEECH:

7. The *preposition* (предлогъ).
8. The *conjunction* (союзъ).
9. The *interjection* (междомѣтіе).

Certain languages, such as the French, German, English and others, make use of a distinctive word before a common noun, whenever employed in speech, unless the same be sufficiently determined by the accompanying word; thus the French say: *le chapeau, la plume*; the German: *der Hut, die Feder*, and the English: *the hat, the pen*. If the common noun, however, be taken in an indeterminate sense, it is then preceded by another word; as: *un chapeau, une plume*; *ein Hut, eine Feder*; *a hat, a pen*. This kind of word is called *article* (членъ), and distinguished in those tongues by the *definite* and *indefinite* article. In French the articles are: *le, la, les*, and *un, une, des*; in German: *der, die, das, die*, and *ein, eine*; in English: *the* and *a* or *an*. The Russian language has no articles, it being left to the sense of the sentence to indicate whether the common noun is taken in a determinate or indeterminate sense. This deficiency is sometimes also supplied by other words, such as *тотъ*, *this*, to indicate a determinate, and *нѣкоторый*, *certain*, to indicate an indeterminate sense; as: *Тотъ человекъ, о которомъ вы говорите, пришѣлъ ко мнѣ*, *the man of whom you speak, is come to me*; *нѣкоторый человекъ пришѣлъ ко мнѣ*, *a man is come to me*.

14.—All words, whether parts of speech or particles, are either *primitive* or *derivative*, *simple* or *compound*. The *primitives* (первообразныя) are such

Division
of words.

as are not formed from other words; e. g. садъ, *garden*; женá, *woman*; бѣлый, *white*; жить, *to live*. The *derivatives* (производныя) are such as are formed from words already existing in the language, e. g. садовникъ, *gardener*; жѣнскій, *womanly*; бѣлизна, *whiteness*; пережить, *to over-live*. *Compounds* (сложныя) are formed of two denominative words; e. g. садоводство, *horticulture*, from садъ, *garden* (lat. *hortus*), and водить, *cultivate*; трудолюбіе, *love of work*, from трудъ, *work*, and любить, *to love*. All other words, whether primitive or derivative, are *simple* (простыя).

Roots
of words.

15.—Every word, whether primitive or derivative, simple or compound, is formed from *roots* (корни), or from radical syllables and letters, which become words by the junction of other roots. Thus in the words: зрю, *I see*; зрѣніе, *the sight*; зрѣмый, *visible*; зоркій, *sharp-sighted*; обозрѣть, *to examine*, the root is the syllable зор or the mixed consonant зр, which becomes significant by the addition of the syllables ю, ніе, имый, кій, обо, &c.—The roots may be divided into *principal* and *secondary*. 1) The *principal* roots (главные) are such as serve to form denominative words, or parts of speech; such are the roots вид, ок, рук, whence the words видѣ, *sight*; око, *eye*; рука, *hand*, are formed. 2) The *secondary* roots (придаточные) are those from which, in the first place, auxiliary words or particles are formed, e. g. изъ, *of*; въ, *in*; съ, *with*; and which afterwards serve to form words by being united with the principal roots; e. g. видный, *visible*; очкі, *spectacles*; поручить, *to commit*. Thus the secondary roots

are: *a) initial* (предыдущіе), placed at the beginning of words, and called *prefixes* or *prepositions*, e. g. у-ходъ, *departure*; от-казъ, *refusal*; and *b) final* (послѣдующіе), which form the terminations of words, and are called *suffixes*, e. g. вод-а, *water*; зем-ля, *earth*; крас-ный, *red*; дѣл-амъ, *to do*.

In order to trace Russian words properly so called, that is to say Slavonian words, to their roots, the learner will do well to proceed in the following manner. Let us take as examples the words преизбыточествовать, *to superabound*, and засвидѣтельствова́ніе, *attestation*. After taking away the initial secondary roots *пре* and *за*, and the finals *вать* and *ваніе*, there remain the words избыточество, *abundance*, and свидѣтельство, *testimony*, which are derived from избытокъ, *superfluity*, and свидѣтель (in Slavonian *свѣдѣтель*), *witness*. These last mentioned are themselves derived from избыть, *to abound*, and свѣдѣть, *to know*; words which are formed of the prepositions *изъ* and *сѣ*, joined to the simple verbs быть, *to be*, and вѣдѣть or вѣдать, *to know*, from whence if we take away the terminations of the infinitive, there remain *бы* and *вѣд*. We thus see the root of the word преизбыточествовать is **БЫ**; the steps of its formation being apparent: быть, избыть, избытокъ, избыточество, избыточествовать, преизбыточествовать; the word засвидѣтельствова́ніе has **Вѣд** for its root, whence are derived: вѣдѣть or вѣдать, свѣдѣть, свѣдѣтель (in Russian *свидѣтель*), свидѣтельство, свидѣтельствова́ть, засвидѣтельствова́ть, засвидѣтельствова́ніе.

Every Russian word of Slavonian origin may be submitted to the same process of dissection, and the learner will find the following words appropriate as an exercise: независимость, *independence*; неизмѣримый, *immensurable*; председа́тельствова́ть, *to preside*; сострада́ніе, *compassion*; изобре́тательность, *invention, inventive faculty*; вспомога́тельный, *auxiliary*; честолю́біе, *ambition*; удовлево́рительный, *satisfactory*; путеше́ственникъ, *traveller*; законода́тельство, *legislation*; земледе́льческій, *agricultural*; царедво́рецъ, *courtier*.

Inflections
of words.

16.—The parts of speech, or denominative words, are distinguished from the particles, or auxiliary words, by being subject to sundry *inflections* (измѣненія), which are usually of two kinds: *constant* (постоянныя) and *accidental* (случайныя).—1) The *constant* inflections are met with in the structure of derivative and compound words. This is what is called the *formation* (образованіе) of a word; e. g. царь, *king*; царица, *queen*; царскій, *royal*; царство, *kingdom*; царственный, *of the kingdom*; царствовать, *to reign*; царствованіе, *reigning*.—2) The *accidental* inflections are the different terminations and prepositions which a word takes, and which without changing its nature serve to express some circumstance connected with the idea designated by the word; e. g. рука, *the hand*; рукою, *with the hand*; руки, *the hands*; вижу, *I see*; видишь, *thou seest*; бѣлый, *white*; бѣлѣйшій, *whiter*; побѣлѣе, *a little whiter*, &c.

Metaplasms
of words.

17.—The different inflections of which words are susceptible, undergo, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, *metaplasms* (перемѣны), which at times change even the final letters of the radical word. These metaplasms or alterations consist in the *permutation* (замѣна) of one letter for another; in the *epenthesis* (вставка) and *prosthesis* (приставка) of some letters, and in the *apocope* (усѣченіе) and *syncope* (изъятіе) of others.

Permutation
of letters.

18.—The *permutation* of letters, in the Russian language, arises from the circumstance that some vowels cannot be placed in juxta-position with certain consonants; thus the hissing, guttural and lingual

consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ; г, к, х; ц) cannot be joined with some vowels; the vowels я, е, ю, and the semi-vowel ъ, never admit immediately before them either the guttural consonants (г, к, х), in any inflection, or sometimes the dental and lisping consonants (д, т; з, с); and further the vowel и, in the derivation of words, never admits before it either the gutturals or the lingual (г, к, х; ц), which are then changed for the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), as is seen below.

PERMUTATION OF LETTERS.

1. The consonants г, д, з,	} before я, е, и, ю, ъ, {	change into ж.
2. The consonants к, т, ц,		change into ч.
3. The consonants х, с,		change into ш.
4. The consonants ск, ст,		change into щ.
5. The vowel я,	} after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ; ц, {	changes into а.
6. The vowel ю,		changes into у.
7. The vowel ы, after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ,		changes into и.
8. The vowel о, after ж, ч, ш, щ; ц,		changes into е.
9. The vowel ъ, after the vowel і,		changes into и.
10. The semi-vowel ъ, after a vowel,		changes into й.
11. The semi-vowels ъ and ѣ, before a consonant with ъ,		change into е.
12. The semi-vowel ъ, before two consonants,		changes into о.

Examples: 1) *служить*, to serve; *вижу*, I see; *рѣжь*, cut, from *служá*, servant; *видѣть*, to see; *рѣзать*, to cut; 2) *мучить*, to torment; *свѣча*, candle; *отѣчество*, native land, from *мѣка*, torment; *свѣтъ*, light; *отѣцъ*, father; 3) *тѣше*, slower; *прошѣніе*, petition, from *тѣхъ*, slow; *просѣть*, to ask; 4) *ищу*, I seek; *чище*, purer, from *искать*, to seek; *чистъ*, pure; 5) *служá* (for *служя́*), serving; 6) *вожѣ*, (for *вожю́*), I lead; 7) *руки*, the hands; *мѣжи*, the men (for *ру́кы*, *мѣ́жы*); 8) *пальцемъ* (for *пáльцомъ*), with the finger; 9) *въ Россіи* (for *въ Россіѣ*), in Russia; 10) *недѣля*, week, has for its genitive plural *недѣль*; whilst *шея*, the neck, has *шей*; 11) *судьба́*, destiny; *копѣйка*, copeck, have in the genitive plural *судѣбъ*, *копѣекъ* (for *судьбъ*, *копѣйкъ*); 12) *во мнѣ*, in me; *со всемъ*, with all (for *въ мнѣ*, *съ все́мъ*).

These permutations are subject to certain exceptions. The dental consonants (д, т) sometimes preserve the Slavonian per-

mutation жд and щ, as гражда́ннѣ, *citizen*; пи́ща, *aliment*, from градо́, city; пита́ть, to nourish. When the accented vowel *e* is pronounced *o* (after ж, ч, ш, щ, ц), the vowel *o* may be used, as хорошо́, *well*; плечо́, *shoulder*; яйцо́, *egg*. It still remains to be observed that in words where г, к, х, ц, are changed before н and к, as по́жка, *a little foot*; вѣ́чный, *eternal*; пасту́шка, *shepherdess*; личны́й, *personal* (from ного́, foot; вѣ́къ, an age; пасту́хъ, shepherd; лице́, individual), the change is not required by the letters н and к, but arises from the circumstance that formerly the semi-vowel *ь*, before which the consonants г, к, х, ц, change into ж, ч, ш, was employed before those consonants (но́бьяка, вѣ́чный, &c.), but has been suppressed in modern orthography.

Epenthesis
and pros-
thesis.

19.—*Epenthesis*, or the insertion of a letter in the middle of a word, and *prosthesis*, or the addition of a letter at the beginning of a word, take place both to facilitate the pronunciation, and to unite letters which cannot be placed in juxta-position. The vowels *o* and *e* are inserted between two consonants at the end of words, and thus serve as a connecting link between the two roots of a compound word; e. g. огóнь, *fire*; вѣтеръ, *wind* (instead of the Slavonian огонь, вѣтръ); законодатель, *legislator*; землеопи-сáнiе, *geography*. The consonant л is inserted also after the labials (б, в, м, п, ф), when they ought to be followed by ю or е; e. g. люблю́, *I love*; дешѣвле, *cheaper* (from любить, to love; дешѣво, cheap). The consonant н is also epenthetic in внушáть, *to suggest*; поднима́ть, *to take up*; на него́, *against him*. The consonant в is sometimes added at the beginning of a word, before the vowel *o*; e. g. во́семь, *eight* (instead of the Slavonian осьмь); во́стры, *sharp*; во́тчина, *patrimony* (used familiarly for о́стрый, о́тчина). The same is the

case with the vowel *o* in *оржаной*, of *rye* (for *ржаной*).

20.—*Аросcope*, or the cutting of a letter at the end of a word, and *syncope*, or the elision of a letter in the middle of a word, are employed to facilitate or soften the pronunciation, e. g. со мною, *with me*; чтобъ, *in order that*; двѣнуть, *to move*; обѣщать, *to promise*; блеснуть, *to shine*; полтора, *one and a half* (instead of со мною, чтобы, двѣнуть, обѣщать, блестятъ, полтора).

Аросcope
and syncope.

THE SUBSTANTIVE.

21.—The *substantives* (существительныя имена) in the Russian language are of two kinds: common nouns or *appellatives* (нарицательныя), as: человекъ, *man*; городъ, *town*; рѣка, *river*; and individual or *proper* nouns (собственные), as: Владимѣръ, *Vladimir*; Москвѣ, *Moscow*; Волга, *the Volga*.—Among the common nouns we distinguish a class called *collective* (собирательныя), such are: народъ, *people*; стадо, *herd*; лѣсъ, *forest*; also *material* nouns (вещественныя), such are: мука, *flour*; масло, *oil*; золото, *gold*.—The proper names of men are of three kinds: *a) christian* names (крѣстные имена), as: Александръ, *Alexander*; Левъ, *Leon*; Ольга, *Olga*; Любовь, *Amu*; *b) patronymic* names (отчественныя), as: Александровичъ and Александровна, *son and daughter of Alexander*; Львовичъ and Львовна, *son and daughter of Leon*; and *c) family* names (прѣзвищныя, фамилныя), as: Державинъ, *Derzhavin*; Орловъ, *Orlof*; Долгорукий, *Dolgorooky*; Толстой, *Tolstoi*.

Division of
substantives.

Properties
of nouns.

22.—The properties of substantives in the Russian language are, the *gender* (родъ), the *aspect* (видъ), the *number* (число) and the *case* (падѣжъ). The two former are *constant* inflections, belonging to the formation of nouns; the two latter are *accidental* inflections, employed in the declension.

Genders.

23.—In the Russian language there are three genders: the *masculine* (мужескій), the *feminine* (женскій) and the *neuter* (средній). The genders of nouns are known, in the names of animate beings, by their *signification*, and in the names of inanimate and abstract objects, by their *termination*.

1. The *masculine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the male sex; e. g. отѣцъ, *the father*; геро́й, *the hero*; царь, *the king*; юноша, *a young man*; дѣ́дя, *an uncle*; мѣ́няло, *a money-changer*; подмасте́рь, *a journeyman*; and also, such names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in ѣ, и, and some which end in ъ, e. g. домо́, *the house*; поко́й, *repose*; корабль, *a vessel*.

2. The *feminine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the female sex; e. g. сестра́, *the sister*; ня́ня, *a nurse*; дочь, *the daughter*; Елисаветъ, *Elizabeth*; Кліо, *Clio*; also the names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in а, я, and some which end in ъ; e. g. кни́га, *a book*; пу́ля, *a ball*; добродѣ́тель, *virtue*.

3. The *neuter* gender comprehends the names of animate beings where the distinction of sex is not evident, as: дитя́ and чадо́, *a child*; чудови́ще, *a monster*; and also the names of animate and abstract

objects terminating in о, е, and мя, е. g. зОЛОТО, *gold*; мОре, *the sea*; врЕмя, *the time*.

As regards the rules relating to the genders, the following observations are of importance:

1. The nouns which designate any particular species of animals, form an exception to the rule which declares the gender of nouns designating animate being to be determined by their *signification*. These nouns are, according to their *termination*, either masculine, as: чЕЛОВѢКЪ, *a man*; носорОГЪ, *a rhinoceros*; соКОЛЪ, *a falcon*; ОКУНЬ, *a perch*; or feminine, as: ОБЕЗЬЯНА, *an ape*; СОБАКА, *a dog*; ЛОШАДЬ, *a horse*; ЩЪКА, *a pike*.

2. To determine the gender of nouns terminating in в, the following rules may be given:

1) Besides such nouns as designate animate beings of the male sex, the following are *masculine*: а) The names of the months, as: янвАрь, *January*; июль, *July*; декАбрь, *December*, &c. б) The names of active objects, or agents, although inanimate, terminating in тЕль, as: числИТЕЛЬ, *the numerator*; множитЕль, *the multiplier*, &c. в) The common nouns designating animate beings, as: гусЬ, *a goose*; лосЬ, *an elk*; &c., with the exception of some names of animals which are feminine, such as: лОШАДЬ, *a horse*; сЕЛЬДЬ, *a herring*; вошь, *a louse*; мышЬ, *a mouse*; форЕль, *the trout*, and some others. д) The names of towns, lakes and places, whether Russian or foreign, as: ЯрослАвь, *Yaroslav*; СевастОполь, *Sebastopol*; БрюссЕль, *Bruxelles*, with the exception of КазАнь, *Kazan*; АстрахАнь, *Astrachan*; Тверь, *Tvair*; ВерсАль, *Versailles*; БулОнЬ, *Boulogne*; МарсЕль, *Marseilles*; ИспагАнь, *Ispahan*; ЭривАнь, *Erivan*.

2) The following are *feminine*: а) All the names of abstract objects, е. g. жизнЬ, *life*; чЕсть, *honour*, &c., with the exception of день, *the day*; перечеНь, *an extract*; вопль, *cries*; вихрь, *a whirlwind*; and foreign words, such as: контрОль, *control*; парОль, *parole*; спектакль, *spectacle*; стилЬ, *style*. б) The names of rivers and countries; е. g. Обь, *the Obi*; СибирЬ, *Siberia*, &c., except Анадырь, *Anadir*. в) The common names of inanimate objects; е. g. бровь, *the eyebrow*; вѣтвь, *a branch*; цѣрковЬ, *a church*, &c., except the following which are masculine:

алкоголь, alcohol.	костыль, a crutch-stick.	ревень, the rhubarb.
алтарь, an altar.	кочень, a head of cab-	ремень, a strap.
бемоль, B-flat. [tunic.	кремёнь, a flint. [bage.	рубль, a rooble.
бешметъ, Tartar under	кремль, citadel, castle.	руль, the helm.
бизань, mizzen-sail.	крёндель, a cracknel.	сбитень, honey-tea.
биль, a billiard ball.	кубáрь, a top.	серáль, a seraglio.
блягирь, massicot. [sail.	ку́дерь, curly hair.	складень, a necklace.
брамсель, top-gallant	ку́коль, corn-cockle.	слизень, the slug.
бредень, a drag-net.	куль, a mat-sack.	словáрь, a dictionary.
буквáрь, ABC-book.	лагерь, a camp.	росленье, double branche.
бюллетень, a bulletin.	лапотъ, a bast-shoe.	ста́вень, a window-
вексель, bill of exchange.	ларь, a large chest.	shutter.
вѣнзель, a monogram.	лѣжень, foundation beam.	ста́ксель, stay-sail.
воды́рь, a tubercle.	локоть, the elbow.	ста́пель, stocks, launch.
гвоздь, a nail.	ломоть, a slice.	сте́бель, a stalk.
глаго́ль, a crane.	ма́рсель, top-sail.	сте́ржень, core (of a boil).
горбы́ль, a sleeve-board.	ме́ргель, marl.	стиха́рь, the surplice.
госпита́ль, a hospital.	минда́ль, almonds.	суда́рь, a winding-sheet.
грёбень, a comb.	митка́ль, calico.	суха́рь, a rusk, biscuit.
гри́фель, a slate-pencil.	монасты́рь, a convent.	то́поль, the poplar.
груздь, a fungus.	му́фель, a mouffle.	трѣнзель, the curb.
дѣготъ, tar.	нашаты́рь, sal ammoniac.	тру́фель, a truffle.
дина́рь, denarius.	ни́коль, nickel.	ту́фель, a slipper.
дождь, rain.	но́готъ, a finger-nail.	уго́ль, charcoal.
дяги́ль, angelica.	нуль, a cipher, zero.	у́ровень, a level.
жѣлудъ, an acorn.	огóнь, fire.	фити́ль, a match. [house).
жонки́ль, the jonquille.	ора́рь, the stole.	фли́гель, a wing (of a
золоте́нь, golden-rod.	па́нцырь, coat of mail.	фона́рь, a lantern.
зуба́рь, a toothed plane.	пень, a stump.	фу́хтель, flad side of a
йверень, a splinter.	первста́ль, a peristyle.	хмѣль, the hop. [sword.
пи́бирь, ginger.	перка́ль, shirting calico.	хóдень, an object in mo-
калри́ль, a quadrille.	пе́рстень, a ring.	tion.
календа́рь, almanach.	пистóль, a pistole.	хруста́ль, crystal.
ка́мень, a stone.	пла́мень, flame.	црку́ль, pair of compas-
карто́фель, potatoes.	пла́стырь, a plaster.	цо́коль, the socle. [ses.
ка́шель, a cough.	плетень, wattled hedge.	чекме́нь, cosack upper-
ке́гель, a skittle.	портфе́ль, a portfolio.	coat.
кѣрвель, chervil.	по́ршень, a piston.	чернота́ль, bay-leaved
кнѣль, the keel (of a ship).	про́лежень, place chafed	willow.
ки́пень, hot-spring.	by lying.	чихи́рь, new wine.
кисе́ль, a sourish jelly.	проти́вень, dripping-pan.	шѣлудъ, the scab.
кнстѣнь, bullet tied to a	про́фяль, a profile.	ше́фель, a bushel.
ко́готъ, a claw. [string.	пузы́рь, a bladder.	шкво́рень, pole-bolt (of
козы́рь, a trump.	пу́пирь, a pimple.	a coach).
коло́дезь, a well.	пусты́рь, a vacant space.	шпи́ль, a capstan.
ко́пытенъ, wild nard.	пу́ть, the road.	штѣмпель, a stamp.
кора́бль, a ship.	пѣ́нязь, money.	шти́ль, a calm.
ко́рень, a root.	ра́шкуль, blue-black.	щавѣль, sorrel.
коса́рь, chopping knife.	ра́шпиль, a rasp.	щѣбень, rubbish.

Ѣрь, the letter Ъ.

якорь, an anker.

ясень, the ash-tree.

эль, the letter Л.

янтáрь, sea-amber.

ячмѣнь, barley.

3. Words taken from foreign languages and ending in *и, у, ю*, as: колибри, *a humming bird*; какадý, *the kakatoo*; ревиó, *the review*, are masculine, when they signify an animate being, and neuter when signifying an inanimate object. The other parts of speech, used as substantives, are neuter; e. g. грóмкое урá, *a noisy hurrah*; пѣрвое нѣтъ, *the first no*; неснóсное я, *an insupportable I*.

4. Some nouns, terminating in *а* and *я*, and designating animate beings, with some quality attached, are of the *common* gender (óбщій), being both masculine and feminine. The following are examples:

бродя́га, a vagabond (*man or woman*).обжóра, a glutton (*man or woman*).

брюзгá, a grumbler.

плáкса, a weeper.

вороже́я, a fortune-teller.

порýка, a surety.

вы́скачка, an upstart.

пустомéля, a chatterer.

вѣтрени́ца, a volatile person.

пья́ница, a drunkard.

гуля́ка, a lazy person.

рази́ня, a loiterer.

до́ба, a clever fellow.

рóвня, a person of the same age.

забѣ́йка, a squabbler.

руба́ка, a slasher.

зай́ка, a stutterer.

самоу́чка, a self-taught person.

зѣва́ка, a ninny, a cockney.

свято́ша, a bigoted person.

кривоше́я, a wryneck.

сиротá, an orphan.

ла́комка, a dainty person.

тѣзка, a namesake.

лѣвша́, a left-handed person.

убѣ́йца, a murderer or murderess.

моты́га, a prodigal person.

умни́ца, a clever person.

невѣ́жда, an ignorant person.

ханжа́, a hypocrite.

5. The genders of words signifying relationship, as also the names of animals, are distinguished in various ways. Sometimes by the employment of different words; e. g. оте́ць, *the father*, and ма́ть, *the mother*; сы́нъ, *the son*, and дочь, *the daughter*; бра́тъ, *the brother*; and сестра́, *the sister*; бы́къ, *the bull*, and коро́ва, *the cow*; пѣту́хъ, *the cock*, and ку́рица, *the hen*; бара́нъ, *the ram*, and овца́, *the sheep*, &c. Sometimes the same word and the same gender are applied to both sexes; e. g. другъ, *a friend*; врагъ, *an enemy*; това́рищъ, *a companion*; дитя́, *a child (male and female)*; о́соба, *a person*; occasionally the same word is used but with common gender, as has already been said. Usually however masculine nouns, if used to designate feminine objects, change their termination. In these, which are called *movable* nouns (двѣжимыя), for the masculine ending

are substituted the feminine terminations: *а, я, ка, овка, иха, ица, ница, иня, ша*, and some others, the preceding consonant being at the same time often changed, as is seen in the following examples:

кумъ, godfather; кумá, godmother.
 павлѣнъ, peacock; пáва, peahen.
 господи́нъ, master; госпожа́, mistress.
 тещъ, father-in-law; тѣща, mother-in-law.
 дуракъ; ду́ра, a fool, *m.* and *f.*
 козѣлъ, a he-goat; коза́, a she-goat.
 гость; гостѣя, a guest, *m.* and *f.*
 игу́менъ, an abbot; игу́менья, an abbess.
 лгу́нъ; лгу́нья, a liar, *m.* and *f.*
 сосѣдъ; сосѣдка, a neighbour, *m.* and *f.*
 слугá, man-servant; -жа́нка, maid-servant.
 пасту́хъ, shepherd; -у́шка, shepherdess.
 крестья́нинъ; крестья́нка, peasant, *m.* and *f.*
 самѣцъ, a male; самка́, a female.
 хозя́инъ, host; хозяй́ка, hostess.
 жи́дъ, a Jew; жи́довка, a Jewess.
 чи́жъ, siskin; чи́жѣвка, hen-siskin.
 щего́ль, a beau; щеголи́ха, a belle.
 по́варъ, a cook; повариха́, a cook-maid.

шутъ; шутóвка, a buffoon, *m.* and *f.*
 левъ, a lion; льви́ца, a lioness.
 импе́раторъ, emperor; -патрѣ́ца, empress.
 жрецъ, priest; жри́ца, priestess.
 ка́рла; ка́рлица, a dwarf, *m.* and *f.*
 жи́тель; жи́тельница, inhabitant, *m.* and *f.*
 мона́хъ, a monk; мона́хиня, a nun.
 князь, prince; княги́ня, princess.
 геро́й, hero; геро́иня, heroine.
 богъ, a god; боги́ня, a goddess.
 графъ, count; графи́ня, countess.
 опеку́нъ; опеку́нша, a guardian, *m.* and *f.*
 велика́нъ, giant; велика́нша, giantess.
 коро́ль, king; королева́, queen.
 баро́нъ, baron; бароне́сса, baroness.
 госуда́рь; госуда́рыня, sovereign, *m.* and *f.*
 стари́къ, an old man; стару́ха, an old woman.
 швецъ, sempster; швейá, sempstress.
 свѣ́коръ, father-in-law; свекро́вь, mother-in-law.

It remains to be observed that in professional names the Russian language makes a distinction between the name of the wife of a professional man, and the name of a woman who, herself, exercises a profession; e. g. инспе́ктри́ца, *inspectress*, and инспе́кторша, *wife of an inspector*; лека́рка, *a woman who practices medicine*, and лека́рша, *wife of a doctor*; дво́рница, *a female door-keeper*, and дво́рничиха, *wife of a door-keeper*; учи́тельница, *schoolmistress*; and учи́тельша, *wife of a schoolmaster* (from инспе́кторъ, лека́рь, дво́рникъ and учи́тель).

Aspects. 24.—Objects may present themselves to us in different forms, as greater or less, prettier or uglier, than ordinary; and the Russian language has different inflections to express these *aspects*.

1. The *augmentative* nouns (увеличительныя), which terminate in the masculine in *ище, ина*; in the neuter in *ище*, and in the feminine in *ища*, represent the object in a magnified form, at the same time adding the idea of ugliness or deformity; e. g. мужичище, *a great clownish peasant*; дурачина, *a great blockhead*; личище, *great face*; лапища, *a great paw* (from мужикъ, дуракъ, лице and лапа).

2. The *diminutive* nouns (уменьшительныя), which present the object diminished in size, end, in the masculine in *икъ, окъ, екъ, ецъ, якъ*; in the neuter in *ко, це*, and in the feminine in *ка, ца*, e. g. столкъ, *little table*; червякъ, *little worm*; заводецъ, *little manufactory*; деревцо, *little tree*; ручка, *little hand*; вещьца, *little thing* (from столъ, червь, заводъ, дерево, рука and вещь). From these diminutives others again are formed, as: столчикъ, червячокъ, ручечка, вещьчка.

Besides these diminutives, which lessen the force of the primitives, and which may be termed *physical* diminutives, there are further: *a*) diminutives of tenderness, friendship, or in one word, of feeling, which terminate in *ушка, юшка, енъка*, as: батюшка, *dear father*; матушка, *dear mother*; маменька, *dear mamma* (from батя, мать and мама); and *b*) diminutives of contempt or slight, presenting the object in an unfavourable point of view; these terminate in *ушко, ушка, енка*, e. g. домишко, *a miserable little house*; лошадёнка, *a miserable little horse*.

Christian names admit also diminutives, both in a favourable and unfavourable sense; thus Иванъ,

John; Пётръ, *Peter*; Серѣй, *Sergius*, become as diminutives of feeling В́аня, Пётя, Серѣжа, and as diminutives of contempt В́анька, Пётька, Серѣжка. These diminutives, by which the primitive nouns are limited and changed, can only be learned by practice.

The diminutives properly so called, which indicate the smallness of objects, are very commonly employed in Russian, while diminutives of feeling and contempt are seldom used except in familiar language. The same remark applies equally to the augmentatives.

Numbers. 25.—In Russian, as in English, there are two numbers; the *singular* (ед́инственное числ́о), as: столъ, *the table*; кн́ига, *a book*; окн́о, *the window*; and the *plural* (мно́жественное), as: столы́, *the tables*; кн́иги, *books*; о́кна, *the windows*.

The Slavonian, like the Greek, has a third number, the *dual* (дво́йственное), which has been retained in certain Russian inflections, as will subsequently be seen.

Some substantives are only used in the *singular*; such are most proper names, and the names of material and abstract objects; e. g. серебр́о, *silver*; ясность, *evidence*; любóвь, *love*. Others are only used in the *plural*; the following are of this class.

<i>Masculine gender.</i>	<i>Neuter gender.</i>	<i>Feminine gender.</i>
квасцы́, alum.	бѣлы́я, white lead.	бирю́льки, the needle game.
люди́, people.	ворóта, yard-gate.	имя́нины, a name-day.
обби́, tapestry.	дрова́, fire-wood.	но́жницы, scissors.
опилки́, saw-dust.	крѣсла́, an arm-chair.	око́вы, fetters, chains.
очки́, spectacles.	перѣ́ля, a balustrade.	о́труби, bran.
прого́ны, post-fare.	письме́на, letters.	ро́дины, delivery.
пя́льцы, a sewing-frame.	раме́на, shoulders.	ры́гъ, a hurdy-gurdy.
судки́, a cruet stand.	уста́, mouth.	са́ни, sledge.
тиски́, a press.	черни́ла, ink.	сумѣ́рки, dawn.
щипцы́, snuffers.	чре́сла, the loins.	су́тки, day (24 hours).

Some names of towns are only used in the plural; such are: Бѣлы́цы, Вязники́, Крестцы́, of the *masculine gender*, and Бронни́цы, Холмогóры, and the foreign names: Аѳѣны́, *Athens*; Яссы́, *Iassy*; Те́бвы, *Thebes*, of the *feminine gender*.

26.—The *cases* are different inflections which nouns assume to indicate the mutual relation of objects. The English language has strictly speaking but one case, the genitive; the mutual relation of words being indicated either by a preposition or by the position of words in a phrase. In the Russian language there are seven cases, which may be known, in the names of animate beings, by putting the questions: *кто, когó, кому́, когó, кѣмъ, о комъ?* and in the names of inanimate objects by the questions: *что, чегó, чему́, что, чѣмъ, о чѣмъ?* These are:

1. The *nominative* (именительный падежъ), which gives the name of an object in a phrase in answer to the question *кто* or *что?* e. g.

Кто́ учится? Учени́къ.

Who studies? *The scholar.*

Что́ предъ нимъ лежи́тъ? Кни́га.

What is before him? *A book.*

2. The *genitive* (родительный), which indicates possession, and which answers to the question *когó* or *чегó?* and also *чей, чья, чьё?* In English this case is expressed by the preposition *of*, or by an apostrophic *s*; e. g.

Хозяи́нъ (чегó?) двóра.

The master (*of what?*) *of the house.*

Домъ (чей?) сосѣ́да.

The house (*of whom?*) *of the neighbour.*

Слу́шайся (когó?) ма́тери.

Obeý (*whom?*) *thy mother.*

3. The *dative* (дательный), which designates the person or thing to which an object relates, and answers to the question *кому́* or *чему́?* In English the dative is usually indicated by the preposition *to*; e. g.

is due this
 Кому́ слѣдуетъ сія награ́да? To whom does this recompense
 Ученику́. come? To the scholar.

Чему́ ты обра́довался? Кни́гу. With what were you delighted?
 With a book.

4. The *accusative* (вни́тельный), which commonly
 called in English grammars the *objective*, answers
 to the question *кого́* or *что́*? e. g.

Кого́ ты хва́лншь? Учени́ка. Whom do you praise? The scholar.

Что́ ты купи́лъ? Кни́гу. What have you bought? A book.

5. The *vocative* (зва́тельный), which expresses
 the name of the person or object addressed; e. g.

Учени́къ, будь приле́жень! Scholar, be attentive!

Бо́же, спаси́ Царя́! God, save the Emperor!

6. The *instrumental* (твори́тельный) or *causa-*
tive, which designates the means or cause, and
 answers to the question *къмъ́* or *чьмъ́*? In English
 the prepositions *with* and *by* are commonly used
 for this purpose; e. g.

Къмъ́ дово́льны? Учени́комъ. With whom is one satisfied?
 With the scholar.

Чьмъ́ онъ забавля́ется? Кни́- With what does he amuses him-
 гою. self? With a book.

7. The *prepositional* (предло́жный) or *locative*,
 which answers to the questions *о́ комъ́* or *о́ чьмъ́*?
въ́ комъ́ or *въ́ чьмъ́*? &c. This case, which in
 ecclesiastical Slavonian is called *narrative* (сказа́-
 тельный), is termed in Russian *prepositional*, because
 it is always accompanied by one of the prepositions
въ́, *in*; *на́*, *on*; *о́* or *объ́*, *of*; *по́*, *after*; *при́*, *near*
то́; e. g.

О́ комъ́ гово́рятъ? Объ́ уче- Of whom do they speak? Of
 никъ́. the scholar.

Въ́ чьмъ́ ты нахо́дишь удово́ль- In what do you find pleasure?
 ствіе́? Въ́ кни́гу. In a book.

Two of these seven casual inflections, the nominative and vocative, are called *direct* cases (прямые), because they simply give the name of the object; the remaining five are termed *oblique* (косвенные).

27.—The change of the inflections in nouns, showing the numbers and cases, is called *declension* (склонение), and substantives are divided, according to the manner in which they are declined, into *regular* and *irregular*. Declension of substantives.

28.—Regular substantives, according to their termination, have three declensions: the *first* for nouns with the *masculine termination*, (ъ, и, ѣ); the *second* for those with the *neuter termination* (о, е, я), and the *third* for those with the *feminine termination* (а, я, ѣ). Each of these declensions has three inflections, one *hard*, and two *soft*, as exhibited in the table below. The two following observations relative to this subject are important. Regular substantives.

1. The *vocative* is always like the *nominative*, except in the words Богъ, *God*; Господь, *Lord*; Исусъ, *Jesus*; Христосъ, *Christ*; Отецъ, *Father*, which, in an invocation of the Deity, preserve the Slavonian inflection; Боже, Господи, Исусе, Христе, Отче.

2.—The *accusative*, singular of masculine nouns in the two first declensions, and plural in all three, is like the *nominative* when the noun designates an inanimate or abstract object, and like the *genitive* in the names of animate beings.

Masculine nouns, ending in *атель* and *итель*, and designating inanimate agents, such as знаменатель, *the denominator*; дѣлитель, *the divisor* (in arithmetic), are declined like the names of animate beings, and consequently their accusative is like the

genitive. The same is the case with the names of inanimate objects which have been borrowed from animate, as: спѹтникъ, *a satellite* (of a planet). The word идолъ, *idol*, has its accusative like the genitive, whilst in its synonymes кумиръ and истуканъ, the accusative is like the nominative. The word лице, signifying *the face* and *an individual*, is used in both its meanings like the name of an inanimate object, its accusative being always the same as the nominative.

The collective nouns are always declined like the names of inanimate objects, though signifying a collection of animate beings, such as народъ, *a nation*; войско, *an army*; стадо, *a herd*.

DECLENSIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.											
CASES: NUMBERS:.....	SINGULAR.	FIRST.			SECOND.			THIRD.			
		MASC. TERMINATION.			NEUTER TERMINATION.			FEM. TERMINATION.			
		<i>Hard infl. Soft infl.</i>			<i>Hard infl. Soft infl.</i>			<i>Hard infl. Soft infl.</i>			
	N.	ъ	й	ь	о	е	мя	а	я	ь	
	G.	а	я	я	а	я	ени	ы	и	и	
	D.	у	ю	ю	у	ю	ени	ѣ	ѣ (и)	и	
	A.	... like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i>							у	ю	ь
	V.	..... like the <i>Nominative</i>								
	I.	омъ	емъ	емъ	омъ	емъ	енемъ	ою (ой)	ею (ей)	ию (ью)	
	P.	ѣ	ѣ (и)	ѣ	ѣ	ѣ (и)	ени	ѣ	ѣ (и)	и	
PLURAL	N.	ы	и	и	а	я	мена	ы	и	и	
	G.	овъ (ей)	евъ	ей	ѣ	ей (й, йи)	ени	ѣ (ей)	ѣ (й, йи)	ей	
	D.	амъ	ямъ	ямъ	амъ	ямъ	енамъ	амъ	ямъ	ямъ	
	A.	..... like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i>								
	V.	..... like the <i>Nominative</i>								
	I.	ами	ями	ями	ами	ями	енами	ами	ями	ями	
	P.	ахъ	яхъ	яхъ	ахъ	яхъ	енахъ	ахъ	яхъ	яхъ	

Rules of the
declensions.

29.—In declining the regular nouns, certain rules are to be observed, some of which are *general*, being common to all the three declensions, while others are *special*, being confined to one of the declensions or one of the inflections.

1. According to what has already been observed (§ 18) relative to the permutation of letters, *a*) the vowel *u*, of the *genitive singular* and *nominative plural*, is changed for *u* after the guttural and hissing consonants (г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ); *b*) the vowel *o*, when without accent, of the *instrumental singular* and *genitive plural*, is changed for *e* after the lingual and hissing consonants (л; ж, ч, ш, щ), observing however that after the lingual (л) the vowel *o* may be used if it is accented; *c*) the vowel *o* of the *dative* and *prepositional singular* is changed for *u* after the vowel *i* (in nouns in *iŭ*, *ie* and *ia*). (See the paradigms 2, 3, 8, 16, 20, 21, 26).

2. A great number of nouns elide in the *other cases* (excepting in the *instrumental singular* of feminine nouns in *b*) the vowel *e* or *o*, inserted in the termination of the *nominative singular*; but we must observe that in this elision the vowel *e* is changed for *o* after the consonant *л*, and for *ŭ* after a vowel. (See paradigms 2, 4, 10, 28).

3. In such nouns of the II and III declension as have two consonants before the final vowel, the vowel *o* or *e* is usually inserted between the two consonants in the *genitive plural*; in such cases however the *e* is always substituted for the semi-vowels *o* and *ŭ*. (See paradigms 12, 13, 20, 23).

4. The *genitive plural* has some particular inflections: the inflection *eŭ* (instead of *oŭ* and *o*) is peculiar to nouns in *оѣ*, *ѣѣ*, *ѣѣ*, *ѣѣ*, to those in *ѣѣ*, *ѣѣ*, *ѣѣ*, preceded by another consonant, and to those in *ѣѣ* and in *ѣѣ*; the inflection *ŭ* to nouns in *e* and *я* preceded by a vowel, and the inflection *iŭ* to nouns in *ѣѣ* and *ѣѣ*, contracted from *ie* and *ia*. (See paradigms 3, 16, 21, 24, 25, 26).

5. Such nouns as are only used in the *plural*, are declined according to the paradigm to which, by their termination, they belong. Thus among the *masculine* nouns, хоробы, *edifice*, is declined according to the 1st paradigm (закѣны); щипцы, *snuffers*, according to the 2d (отцы); обои, *tapestry*, according to the 6th (герѣи); люди, *men* (*instr.* людѣи), according to the 9th (корѣи); among the *neuter* nouns, дрова, *firewood*, according to the 11th (слова); кресла, *arm-chair* (*gen.* креселъ), according to the 12th (стѣкла); письма, *letters*, according to the 18th (времена); among the *feminine* nouns, окѣвы, *chains*, according

to the 19th (коробы); носѣлки, *a hand-barrow* (*gen.* носѣлокъ), according to the 20th (пѣлки); сѣни, *a sledge*, and рылѣ, *a hurdy-gurdy*, according to the 27th (страсти).

6. *Foreign nouns*, whether common or proper, ending in *ъ, ѣ, б; а, я, в*, are declined like Russian nouns with the same terminations, whilst those in *е, и, о, у* and *ю*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with family names of females, whatever may be their termination. Thus *ѡмнибусъ, an omnibus; Лондонъ, London*, are declined according to the 1st paradigm (законъ); *конвоѣ, a convoy; Барклѣй, Barclay*, according to the 6th (герѡѣ); *водевиль, a vaudeville; Брюссель, Bruxelles*, according to the 19th (корѡбъ); *пѣса, a piece*, (of music, &c.); *Петрѣрка, Petrarch*, according to the 19th (корѡва); *колѡнѣя, a colony*, according to the 26th (мѡлнѣя); *гѣванъ f. a haven*, according to the 27th (страсть). But *кѡфе, coffee; колыбри, a humming-bird; депѡ, depot* (military); *рандеву, a rendez-vous; ревью, a review; Кѣстельре, Castlereagh; Морѡ, Moreau*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with the feminine family names; as *Жанлѣсъ, Сталь, &c.*; thus we say: у Господѣжѣ *Жанлѣсъ, at the house of Mrs Genlis; сочинѣнѣе Господѣжѣ Сталь, the work of Mrs Staël.*

Special
rules.

1. Nouns ending in *ѣнокъ*, signifying the young ones of animals, are masculine in the singular; but in the plural they preserve the Slavonian inflection *ята* or *ата*, and are neuter. (See paradigm 4).

2. Nouns ending in *янинъ* or *анинъ* and in *яринъ* or *аринъ*, have peculiar inflections in the plural. (See paradigm 5).

3. In the *instrumental singular* of the III declension, *оу* is contracted in *оѣ, еѣ* in *еѣ*, and *юѣ* in *ѣѣ*; thus we say: *рукѡѣ* or *рукѡѣѣ, with the hand; землѣѣ* or *землѣѣѣ, by the earth*. (See paradigm 28). In the same manner the *instrumental plural* *ями* of some nouns in *ѣ* is contracted in *ѣми*, the accent being in such cases placed on the last syllable; thus we say: *людѣмѣѣ, with men; дверьмѣѣ, by gates; лошадемѣѣ, with horses* (and not *людѣѣми, дверьѣѣми, лошадемѣѣми*).

4. The *genitive singular* of masculine nouns in *ъ, ѣ, ѣ*, signifying divisible matter, often takes, especially in familiar language, the inflection *ѣ* and *ю* of the dative (instead of *ѣ* and *ѣ*); thus we say: *фунтъ сѣхару, a pound of sugar; лѡжка дѣгтю, a spoonful of tar; чѣшка чѣю, a cup of tea*. The same

inflection (instead of *н*) is also found in the *prepositional singular*, accompanied with the preposition *въ* or *на*, in some nouns in *з* and *щ*, and in such cases takes the tonic accent; thus we say: *въ саду́*, in the garden; *на краю́*, on the brink.

5. In *compound substantives*, the first word is also declined, if in its junction with the second it has preserved the termination of its nominative singular; thus *Ца́рьградъ*, *Constantinople*, is declined according to the 9th and the 1st paradigm: *Г. Царягра́да, D. Царюгра́ду, I. Царемъгра́домъ, P. о Царьгра́дъ*. With respect to the names of towns compounded of the adjectives *новъ* and *бѣлъ*, as *Но́вгородъ*, *Бѣло́зеро*, and to the common nouns formed of the numeral *полъ*, the *half*: as: *по́лдень*, *midday*; *по́лгода*, *half a year*, we refer the student to our remarks on that subject in the declension of the adjectives and numerals.

30.—By observing the above general and special rules we shall be able to decline all the regular nouns of the Russian language according to the following 28 paradigms. Paradigms of the declensions of substantives.

According to the 1st paradigm (зако́нъ) are declined nouns First declension. in *з* (with the exception of those which belong to the 4 following paradigms), remembering however to change *и* into *у* after the gutturals (*г, к, х*), and *о* into *е* after the lingual (*ц*), and observing further, that several nouns of the 1st declension throw the accent on the inflections of the cases, some commencing with the genitive singular, others with the nominative plural, and others again with the genitive plural. Such are:

Ба́рака, the ram. <i>Г. бара́на.</i>	Да́ръ, the gift. <i>Г. да́ра; N. пл. дары́.</i>
Верте́нъ, the cavern. <i>верте́на.</i>	До́лгъ, the debt. <i>до́лга; долги́.</i>
Ку́миръ, an idol. <i>ку́мира.</i>	Чи́нъ, a rank. <i>чи́на; чины́.</i>
Волхв́ъ, the magician. <i>волхв́а.</i>	Ша́ръ, a ball. <i>ша́ра; шары́.</i>
Враѓъ, the enemy. <i>врага́.</i>	Бо́гъ, a god; <i>N. пл. бо́ги, Г. бого́въ.</i>
Язы́къ, the tongue. <i>языка́.</i>	Вор́ъ, a robber; <i>во́ры, воро́въ.</i>
Пѣту́хъ, a cock. <i>пѣтуха́.</i>	Гро́бъ, a coffin; <i>грóбы, гробо́въ.</i>
Мѣся́цъ, a month. <i>мѣсяца́.</i>	Дуб́ъ, an oak; <i>ду́бы, дубо́въ.</i>
Кузне́цъ, the blacksmith. <i>кузнеца́.</i>	Волќъ, the wolf; <i>во́лки, волко́въ.</i>

According to the 2d paradigm (оте́цъ) are declined the nouns in which the vowel *е* or *о* of the nominative is elided in the other cases, observing at the same time the change of *е* into *и* after the consonant *л*, and into *ь* after a vowel. Such are:

PARADIGMS OF THE THREE DECLENS

		S I N G U					
		Nominat. and Vocat.		Genitive.	Dat.	Accus.	
DECLENSIONS:	TERMINATIONS:	PARADIGMS:					
		FIRST.					
		ъ	1.	зако́нъ, the law . . .	зако́н-а . . .	у . . .	{ the <i>Nom.</i> , in the names of inanimate beings, the <i>Gen.</i> , in the masc. names of animate beings. like
			2.	оте́цъ, the father . . .	оте́ц-а . . .	у́ . . .	
			3.	шала́шъ, a cabin . . .	шала́ш-а . . .	у́ . . .	
			4.	теле́нокъ, a calf . . .	теле́нк-а . . .	у . . .	
		и	5.	дворя́нинъ, a gentleman	дворя́нин-а . . .	у . . .	
			6.	геро́й, the hero . . .	геро́-я . . .	ю . . .	
			7.	со́ловейъ, a nightingale	со́лов-ья́ . . .	ью́ . . .	
			8.	гени́й, a genius . . .	гени́-я . . .	ю . . .	
ь	9.	коро́ль, the king . . .	коро́л-я́ . . .	ю́ . . .			
	10.	огóнь, the fire . . .	огн-я́ . . .	ю́ . . .			
SECOND.	{	о	11.	сло́во, a word . . .	сло́в-а . . .	у . . .	
			12.	стекло́, the glass . . .	стекл-а́ . . .	у́ . . .	
			13.	коле́чко, small ring . . .	коле́чк-а . . .	у . . .	
			14.	мо́ре, the sea . . .	мо́р-я . . .	ю . . .	
		е	15.	ружьё́, a gun . . .	ружь-ья́ . . .	ью́ . . .	
			16.	мнѣ́нiе, an opinion . . .	мнѣ́н-я . . .	ю . . .	
			17.	дѣ́тише, n. a great child	дѣ́тищ-а . . .	у . . .	
			18.	вре́мя, the time . . .	вре́м-ени . . .	ени . . .	
THIRD.	{	а	19.	коро́ва, a cow . . .	коро́в-ы . . .	ѣ . . .	{ the <i>Nom.</i> , in the names of inanimate beings, the <i>Gen.</i> , in the masc. names of animate beings. like
			20.	пáлка, a stick . . .	пáлк-и . . .	ѣ . . .	
			21.	возжа́, a bridle . . .	возж-и́ . . .	ѣ . . .	
			22.	недѣ́ля, the week . . .	недѣ́л-и . . .	ѣ . . .	
		я	23.	пѣ́ня, a song . . .	пѣ́сн-и . . .	ѣ . . .	
			24.	сва́я, a pile . . .	сва́-и . . .	ѣ . . .	
			25.	судья́, the judge . . .	суд-ья́ . . .	ѣ́ . . .	
			26.	мо́лнiя, a lightning . . .	мо́лн-и . . .	и . . .	
		ь	27.	стра́сть, a passion . . .	стра́ст-и . . .	и . . .	
			28.	ложь, the lie . . .	лж-и . . .	и . . .	

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the declensions, the following rules are to be observed.

1. Nouns of the 1st declension commonly preserve through all the cases both of the singular and plural, the accent of the nominative singular. But most polysyllabic nouns, the termination of which is accented, transfer the accent to the inflection of the genitive, and keep it on this syllable through all the other cases. Several monosyllables follow the same rule. Other monosyllables preserve the nominative accent in the singular, but in the plural they transfer it to the inflections of the cases, some in all the cases, others from the genitive downwards.

2. In the 2nd declension, the accent serves to distinguish the nominative plural from the genitive singular. On this account, those nouns which in

SIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.

L A R.			P L U R A L.					
<i>Instrum. Prep.</i>			<i>Nom. and Voc. Genitive.</i>		<i>Dative.</i>	<i>Accus.</i>	<i>Instrum.</i>	<i>Prepos.</i>
омъ . . ѳ . .			закѡн-ы . . .	овъ . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.
ѣмъ . . ѳ . .			отцъ-ы . . .	ѣвъ . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.
ѣмъ . . ѳ . .			шалашъ-и . . .	ѣи . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.
омъ . . ѳ . .			телѣт-а . . .	ъ . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.
омъ . . ѳ . .			дворѣ-н . . .	ъ . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.
емъ . . ѳ . .			герѡ-н . . .	евъ . .	ямъ . .		ями . .	яхъ.
бѣмъ . . ѳ ѳ . .			солов-ѣи . . .	бѣвъ . .	ѣямъ . .		ѣями . .	ѣяхъ.
емъ . . н . .			гѣнѣ-и . . .	евъ . .	ямъ . .		ями . .	яхъ.
ѣмъ . . ѳ . .			королъ-и . . .	ѣи . .	ямъ . .		ѣми . .	ѣхъ.
ѣмъ . . ѳ . .			огнъ-и . . .	ѣи . .	ямъ . .		ѣми . .	ѣхъ.
<div style="display: flex; align-items: center; justify-content: center;"> <div style="writing-mode: vertical-rl; transform: rotate(180deg); font-size: small; margin-right: 10px;"> like {the Nominative, in the names of inanimate beings. the Genitive, in the names of animate beings. </div> </div>								
омъ . . ѳ . .			словъ-а . . .	ъ . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.
омъ . . ѳ . .			стѣклъ-а . . .	стѣколъ-ъ . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.
омъ . . ѳ . .			колѣчк-и . . .	колѣчекъ-ъ . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.
емъ . . ѳ . .			моръ-ѣ . . .	ѣи . .	ямъ . .		ями . .	яхъ.
бѣмъ . . ѳ ѳ . .			ружъ-ѣя . . .	ѣи . .	ѣямъ . .		ѣями . .	ѣяхъ.
емъ . . н . .			мнѣи-ѣя . . .	ѣи . .	ямъ . .		ями . .	яхъ.
емъ . . ѳ . .			дѣтѣи-н . . .	ъ . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.
енемъ . . ени . .			времъ-енѣ . . .	ѣнъ . .	енѣямъ . .		енѣями . .	енѣяхъ.
ою . . ѳ . .			корѡв-ы . . .	ъ . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.
ою . . ѳ . .			пѣлк-и . . .	пѣлокъ-ъ . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.
ѣю . . ѳ . .			вѡзж-и . . .	ѣи . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.
ею . . ѳ . .			недѣл-и . . .	ъ . .	ямъ . .		ями . .	яхъ.
ею . . ѳ . .			пѣсен-и . . .	пѣсенъ-ъ . .	ямъ . .		ями . .	яхъ.
ею . . ѳ . .			свѣ-и . . .	ѣи . .	ямъ . .		ями . .	яхъ.
бѣю . . ѳ ѳ . .			судъ-ѣи . . .	ѣи . .	ѣямъ . .		ѣями . .	ѣяхъ.
ею . . н . .			мѡлнѣ-и . . .	ѣи . .	ямъ . .		ями . .	яхъ.
ію . . н . .			страстъ-и . . .	ѣи . .	ямъ . .		ями . .	яхъ.
лѡжью . . лжи . .			лж-и . . .	ѣи . .	амъ . .		ами . .	ахъ.

singular have the accent on the first syllable, transfer it in the plural to the last; while, on the contrary, those which in the singular have the accent on the last syllable, transfer it in the plural to the first, and keep it on that syllable through all the cases, both of the singular and plural.

3. In the III^d declension a distinction between the genitive singular and nominative plural only takes place in such nouns in *a* and *я*, as have the accent on the termination. These nouns transfer the accent to the first syllable in the nominative plural, resuming in all the other cases the accent of the singular. Some of these nouns have also in the accusative singular the accent on the first syllable. Among the nouns in *ъ*, there are several which transfer the accent to the inflections on the cases, from the genitive plural downwards.—The examples to these different rules here follow.

Орёлъ, an eagle, *G.* орла.
 Ковёръ, a carpet, ковра.
 Крючокъ, a hook, крючка.
 Левъ, a lion, льва.
 Кулёкъ, a sack, куляка.
 Илемъ, the elm-tree, ильма.
 Конёкъ, a skate, конька.
 Боецъ, a wrestler, бойца.
 Заяцъ (and зайцъ), a hare, зайца.
 Опёкъ, a calf's skin, опёйка.

Багоръ, a hook, *G.* багра.
 Посолъ, an ambassador, посла.
 Лобъ, the forehead, лба.
 Псаломъ, a psalm, псалма.
 Ротъ, the mouth, рта.
 Участокъ, a portion, участка.
 Сонъ, sleep, сна.
 Уголъ, an angle, угла.
 Замокъ, a castle, замка.
 Замокъ, a lock, замка.

According to the 3d paradigm (шала́шъ) are declined such nouns in *ъ* with a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), as form the *genitive plural* in *ей*; such are:

Падёжъ, the case, *G.* падежа.
 Платёжъ, the payment, платежа.
 Моржъ, a walrus, моржа.
 Ёжъ, a hedgehog, ежа.
 Ключъ, the key, ключа.
 Лучъ, a ray, луча.
 Кирпичъ, a brick, кирпича.
 Мечъ, a sword, меча.

Пала́шъ, the sabre, *G.* палаша.
 Ландышъ, the mayflower, ландыша.
 Каранда́шъ, a pencil, карандаша.
 Торга́шъ, the mercer, торгоша.
 Плащъ, a mantle, плаща.
 Лёщъ, the bream, леща.
 Товари́щъ, a comrade, товарища.
 Ово́щъ, a fruit, овоца.

According to the 4th paradigm (телёнокъ) are declined the names of the young of animals, ending in *ёнокъ*, which, having retained in the plural the Slavonian inflection *ята* (or *ата* after *ю* and *ч*), are neuter and consequently belong, in the singular to the 1st declension, and in the plural to the 2d. Some of these nouns however form their plural regularly in *енки*. Such are:

Ягнёнокъ, a lamb; *N. pl.* ягната.
 Жеребёнокъ, a foal; жеребáта.
 Цыплёнокъ, a pullet; цыплáта.

Ослёнокъ, a young ass; *N. pl.* ослáта.
 Волчёнокъ, a wolf's cub; волчáта.
 Медвѣжёнокъ, a bear's cub; медвѣжáта.

Поросёнокъ, a little pig; поросáта.

Львёнокъ, a lion's whelp; *N. pl.* львѣнки.

Котёнокъ, a kitten; котáта.

Галчёнокъ, a young awl; галчѣнки.

Ребёнокъ, a child; ребáта.

Мышёнокъ, a young mouse; мышѣнки.

Also щенóкъ, a *pup*, *G.* щенка́, *N. pl.* щеня́та and щенки́.

According to the 5th paradigm (дворя́нинъ) are declined nouns in *инъ*, *анинъ*, *яринъ* and *аринъ*, which in the *plural* change *инъ* into *е*, *ъ*, *амъ*, &c.; such are:

Селя́нинъ, a villager; *N. pl.* селя́не.
 Крестя́нинъ, a peasant; крестя́не.

Мі́рянинъ, a layman; *N. pl.* мі́ряне.
 Поселя́нинъ, a husbandman; посе́ляне.

Семьянинъ, the head of a family; <i>N. pl.</i> семьяне.	Огнѣщанинъ, a freeman; <i>N. pl.</i> огнѣщане.
Россіянинъ, a Russian; Россіяне.	Христіанинъ, a Christian; христіане.
Гражданинъ, a citizen; граждѣне.	Бояринъ, a lord; бояре.
Мѣщанинъ, a burgher; мѣщѣне.	Болгаринъ, a Bulgarian; Болгаре.

According to the 6th paradigm (герой) are declined the nouns in *ѣ*, with the exception of those in *иѣ* and of some in *ей*, which belong to the two following paradigms. Such are:

Покѣй, a room, <i>G.</i> покѣя.	Лишѣй, a scab, <i>G.</i> лишѣя.
Злодѣй, a wretch, злодѣя.	Пѣй, a part, пѣя.
Казначѣй, a treasurer, казначѣя.	Бѣй, the combat, <i>G.</i> бѣя; <i>N. pl.</i> бѣи.
Сарѣй, a coach-house, сарѣя.	Рѣй, a swarm, рѣя; рои.
Слѣчай, the occasion, слѣчая.	Стрѣй, the rank, стрѣя; строи.
Налѣй, a desk, налѣя.	Чѣй, the tea, чѣя; чаи.

According to the 7th paradigm (соловѣй) are declined eight nouns in *ей*, as change the *e* of the nominative into *ѣ* in all the other cases. Some Christian names in *иѣ*, in familiar language, are declined in the same manner. Such are:

Воробѣй, a sparrow, <i>G.</i> воробѣя.	Чирѣй, a furuncle, <i>G.</i> чирѣя.
Муравѣй, an ant, муравѣя.	Василѣй, Basil, Василѣя.
Ручѣй, a brook, ручѣя.	Григорѣй, Gregory, Григорѣя.
Репѣй, a little ribbon, репѣя.	Левонтѣй, Leontius, Левонтѣя.
Улѣй, a bee-hive, ѣля.	Прокѣфѣй, Procopius, Прокѣфѣя.
Жеребѣй, the lot, жеребѣя.	Игнатѣй, Ignatius, Игнатѣя.

According to the 8th paradigm (гѣніѣй) are declined such nouns in *иѣ*, as take the inflection *и* (instead of *ѣ*) in the *prepositional singular*; such are:

Викѣріѣй, a vicar, <i>G.</i> викѣріѣя.	Виночѣрпѣй, a cup-bearer, <i>G.</i> виночѣрпѣя.
Инвентѣріѣй, an inventory, инвентѣріѣя.	Меркѣріѣй, Mercury, Меркѣріѣя.
Комментѣріѣй, a commentary, -ментѣріѣя.	Сергіѣй, Sergius, Сергіѣя.

Some substantives in *ѣ*, as портноѣй, a tailor; кѣрмчѣй, the pilot, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 9th paradigm (корѣль) are declined the masculine nouns in *ѣ*, with the exception of those which belong to the following paradigm. Such are:

Жѣлудѣй, an acorn, <i>G.</i> жѣлудѣя.	Госудѣрь, a sovereign, <i>G.</i> госудѣря.
Колѣдѣзѣй, a well, колѣдѣзѣя.	Олѣнь, a stag, олѣня.
Учѣтель, the teacher, учѣтеля.	Медвѣдѣй, a bear, медвѣдѣя.
Сѣбѣль, a sable, сѣбѣля.	Царѣй, a king, царѣя.
Слѣсарѣй, a lock-smith, слѣсарѣя.	Корѣбль, a vessel, корѣбля.

Фонарь, a lantern, *Г. фонаря.*

Фитиль, a match, *фитиля.*

Гусь, a goose; *Н. рл. гуси, Г. гусей.*

Голубь, a pigeon; *голуби, голубей.*

Звѣрь, a beast; *звѣри, звѣрей.*

Червь, a worm; *черви, червей.*

According to the 10th paradigm (*огóнь*) are declined such masculine nouns in *ь*, as elide the vowel *e* or *o* in all the other cases; such are:

Камень, a stone, *Г. камня.*

Стебель, a stem, *стебля.*

Лапоть, a bast shoe, *лаптя.*

Ремень, a thong, *ремня.*

Кремень, a flint, *кремня.*

Ломоть, a slice, *ломтя.*

Корень, the root; *Н. рл. корни, Г. корней.*

Угорь, an eel; *угри, угрей.*

Ноготь, a nail; *ногти, ногтей.*

Коготь, a claw; *когти, когтей.*

Перстень, a ring; *перстни, перстней.*

Локоть, the elbow; *локти, локтей.*

In the list of masculine nouns in *ь*, given in § 23, which elide the vowel *e* or *o* of the nominative, this vowel is printed in *italics*.

Second
declension.

According to the 11th paradigm (*сло́во*) are declined the nouns in *o*, and those in *це, эе, че* and *ше* (with the exception of such as belong to the following paradigm, of the diminutives in *ко* and *це* and augmentatives in *ше*), observing however the change of *o* into *e* after the hissing consonants and the lingual (*ж, ч, ш, ц*), and remarking that several nouns of the II^d declension transfer in the plural the accent from the first syllable to the last, and *vice versa*. Such are:

Тѣло, the body, *Г. тѣла; Н. рл. тѣла.*

Стадо, a herd, *стада; стада,*

Зеркало, a mirror, *зеркала; зеркала.*

Озеро, a lake, *озера; озера.*

Вино, the wine, *вина; вина.*

Село, a village, *села; села.*

Колесо, a wheel, *колеса; колёса.*

Долото, a chisel, *долота; долота.*

Чадо, *н.* a child, *Г. and Н. рл. чада.*

Свѣтло, a star, *свѣтила.*

Мѣняло, *м.* a changer, *мѣняла.*

Лице, the face, *Г. лица; Н. рл. лица.*

Яйце, an egg, *яйца; яйца (Г. яицъ).*

Плечё, the shoulder, *плеча; плеча.*

Ложь, the couch, *Г. and Н. рл. ложа.*

Вѣче, an assembly, *вѣча.*

Жилище, a dwelling, *жилица.*

Зрѣлище, a spectacle, *зрѣлица.*

Сокровище, a treasure, *сокровища.*

Гульбище, a promenade, *гульбища.*

Училище, a school, *училица.*

Кладбище, a cemetery, *кладбища.*

According to the 12th paradigm (*стекло́*) are declined those nouns in *o* and *e*, preceded by two consonants, which usually insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, observing at the same time that the nouns in *це* take the vowel *e*, and that the semi-vowel *ь* between the two consonants is changed into *e*. Such are:

Ребро, a rib; *Н. рл. ребра, Г. реберъ.*

Пятно, a spot; *пятна, пятенъ.*

Зерно, a grain; *зёрна, зёренъ.*

Щемло, a vice, *Н. рл. щемла, Г. щемель.*

Сукно, cloth; *сукна, суконъ.*

Окно, the window; *окна, оконъ.*

Бревнó, a beam; <i>N. pl.</i> брёвна, <i>G.</i> брёвенъ.	Числó, a number; <i>N. pl.</i> числа, <i>G.</i> чиселъ (and числъ).
Письмó, a letter; письма, писемъ.	Сърдце, the heart; сердцá, сердецъ.
Полотнó, linen; полотна, полотень.	Кольцё, a ring; кольца, колецъ.
Сѣдлó, a saddle; сѣдла, сѣделъ.	Крыльцё, a step; крыльца, крылецъ.

It is necessary to observe that in nouns in *здо, сто, ско* and *ство*, the genitive plural is formed without the insertion of any letter; e. g. ГНѢздó, a nest; мѣстó, a place; вóйско, an army; чýвство, the feeling,—*gen. plur.* ГНѢздъ, мѣстъ, войскъ, чувствъ.

According to the 13th paradigm (колéчко) are declined the diminutives in *ко* and *це*, which form their *nominative plural* in *и* (for those in *ко*) or in *ы* (for those in *це*), inserting the vowel *e* in the genitive plural. Such are:

Сердéчко, little heart; <i>pl.</i> сердéчки, -дéчекъ.	Дóнце, little bottom; <i>pl.</i> дóнцы, [-тéчекъ. дóнецъ.
Мѣстéчко, little place; мѣстéчки,	Дýльце, mouth piece; дýльцы,
Крыльщико, little wing; крыльщики, -лышекъ.	дýлецъ. Рýльце, little snout; рýльцы, рýлецъ.
Домышко, little house; домышки, -мышекъ.	Полотéнце, a towel; полотéнцы, -тéнецъ.

According to the 14th paradigm (мóре) are declined those nouns in *ле* and *ре*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*; e. g.

Пóле, the field; <i>G.</i> поля, <i>N. pl.</i> поля, <i>G.</i> полей.
Гóре, a grief; гóря (not used in the <i>plural</i>).

According to the 15th paradigm (ружьё) are declined those nouns in *е* and in *ее*, which change in the *genitive plural*, *е* and *ее* into *ей*, and *е*, a contraction of *ие*, into *ий*. Such are:

Жилъё, a floor; <i>pl.</i> жилъя, <i>G.</i> жилей.	Платьё, a coat, <i>G. pl.</i> платьей.
Копьё, a lance; копья, копей.	Верховье, a spring, верховей.
Питьё, a beverage; питья, пей.	Весельё, an enjoyment, веселй.
Лезвё, the edge; лезвья, лезвей.	Воскресенье, Sunday, воскресний.
Острё, the point, edge; острия, острей.	Повѣрье, a belief, повѣрий.

The following nouns in *е* form their *genitive plural* in *евъ*: подмастёрье *т.*, the journeyman; кúшанье, a dish; помѣстье, a domain; úстье, mouth (of a river); варенье, a preserve.

According to the 16th paradigm (мнѣнiе) are declined nouns in *иe*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ий*, and which in the *prepositional singular* take the inflection *и* (instead of *ю*). In

these nouns the accent of the nominative plural is the same as that of the genitive singular. Such are:

Здѣніе, an edifice, <i>G. and N. pl. зданія.</i>	Оружіе, an arm, <i>G. and N. pl. оружія.</i>
Знѣніе, knowledge, знанія.	Явленіе, an apparition, явленія. [нія.]
Желѣніе, the desire, желанія.	Сообщеніе, a communication, сообще-
Понятіе, an idea, понятія.	Сомнѣніе, the doubt, сомнѣнія.
Собраніе, an assembly, собранія.	Владѣніе, the possession, владѣнія.
Растѣніе, a plant, растенія.	Созвѣздіе, a constellation, созвѣздія.

According to the 17th paradigm (дѣтище) are declined the augmentative nouns, which form their plural in *и, ей, &c.*; e. g.

Домѣще, great house; <i>pl. домѣщи, -щей.</i>	Столѣще, great table; <i>pl. столѣщи, -щей.</i>
Дворѣще, great court, дворѣщи.	Козлѣще, <i>m.</i> great he-goat; козлѣщи.
Мужичѣще, <i>m.</i> big peasant; мужичѣщи.	Покѣще, great room; покѣщи.

Some substantives in *ое*, as живѣтное, *an animal*; морѣженое, *ice-creams*, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 18th paradigm (врѣмя) are declined nouns in *мя*. In the plural the accent is transferred to the last syllable. Such are:

Брѣмя, the burden, <i>N. pl. бремена.</i>	Плѣмя, the race, <i>N. pl. племена.</i>
Вымя, an udder, вымена.	Стрѣмя, the stirrup, стремѣна.
Имя, the name, имена.	Тѣмя, the sinciput, тѣменѣ.
Плѣмя, the flame (no <i>plural</i>).	Знамя, the flag, знаменѣ and знамѣна.

By the same paradigm is declined сѣмя, *seed, plur. сѣменѣ*, which however has retained in the genitive plural the Slavonian inflection сѣмянѣ (instead of сѣмѣнѣ), to be distinguished from the proper name Семѣнѣ, *Simeon*.

Third
declension

According to the 19th paradigm (корѣва) are declined the nouns in *а* (excepting such as belong to the two following paradigms). It is necessary to observe the change of *и* into *у* after the guttural and hissing consonants (г, к, х; ж, ч, ш), and of *о* into *е* after the hissings and the lingual (ж, ч, ш; ц), and also to remark that several nouns of the III^d declension in *а* and *я* transfer the accent in the nominative plural, and some of them also in the accusative singular, from the last syllable to the first. Such are:

Рыба, the fish, <i>G. and N. pl.</i> рыбы.	Звѣзда, a star, <i>G. звѣзды; N. pl. звѣзды.</i>
Шляпа, a hat, шляпы.	Женá, the wife, жени́; жёны.
Побѣда, victory, побѣды.	Слугá, a servant, слуги́; слуги.
Рóза, a rose, рóзы.	Рѣкá, a river, рѣки́; рѣки.
Кни́га, a book, книги́.	Водá, water, <i>G. воды́, A. воду́, N. pl. воды́.</i>
Соба́ка, a dog, собаки́.	Зимá, winter, зимы́, зиму́; зими́.
Му́ха, a fly, му́хи.	Рука́, the hand, руки́, руку́; ру́ки.
Ко́жа, the skin, ко́жи.	Голова́, the head, головы́, голову́; головы́.
Ту́ча, the cloud, ту́чи.	Сковорода́, a frying pan, сковороду́, -роды́.
Гру́ша, a pear, гру́ши.	
Вдовá, a widow, <i>G. вдовы́; N. pl. вдовы́.</i>	

According to the 20th paradigm (па́лка) are declined most nouns in *a* preceded by two consonants, or by one consonant and *o* or *u*, which insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, *o* and *u* then changing into *e*. Such are:

Ложка, the spoon; <i>G. pl.</i> ложекъ.	Койма́, the hem; <i>G. pl.</i> коёмъ.
Сосна, the fir; сосенъ.	Копѣйка, a copeck; копѣекъ.
Сказка, a tale; сказокъ.	Райна, a ship's yard; раенъ.
Шапка, a cap; шапокъ.	Сва́дьба, the marriage; свадебъ.
Утка, a duck; утокъ.	Судьба́, fate; <i>N. pl.</i> судьбы́, <i>G. судебъ.</i>
Овца́, a sheep; <i>A. овцу́, G. pl.</i> овецъ.	Тюрьма́, the prison; тюрьмы́, тюремъ.
Доска́, a plank; доску́, досокъ.	Серьга́, an ear-ring; серьги́, серёгъ.

The vowels *o* or *e* are inserted solely to facilitate the pronunciation; for if the two or three consonants in juxta-position can be articulated without difficulty, the insertion does not take place. Thus: про́сьба, *the demand*; ста́роста, *a bailiff*; верста́, *a werst*; же́ртва, *a victim*, form their *genitive plural*: просьбъ́, ста́ростъ́, ве́рстъ́, жертвъ́. The *genitive plural* of война́, *war*, is во́йнъ, and that of та́йна, *a sacrament*, is та́инъ.

According to the 21th paradigm (возжа́) are declined nouns in *жа, ча, ша*, preceded by a consonant, as also those in *ща*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*. Such are:

Ханжа́, a bigot; <i>G. pl.</i> ханжей́.	Лѣвшá, a left-handed person; <i>G. pl.</i>
Парча́, brocade; парчей́.	Вѣкша, a squirrel; вѣкшей. [лѣвшей́.
Притча́, a proverb; притчей́.	Роща́, a grove; рощей́.
Каланча́, a belfry; каланчей́.	Толща́, the thickness; толщей́.

In the same manner are declined юноша́, *young man*, and пашá, *a pacha*, *G. pl.* юношей́ and пашей́.

According to the 22th paradigm (недѣля́) are declined nouns in *я*, preceded by a consonant, which form their *genitive plural*

in *ь*, with the exception of some which form it in *ей*, and others in *ь* and *ей*. Such are:

Баня, the bath; *G. pl.* бань.
 Пуля, a ball; пуль.
 Буря, a tempest; бурь.
 Гиря, a weight; гирь.
 Дыня, a melon; дынь.
 Богиня, a goddess; богинь.
 Пустыня, a desert; пустынь.
 Потёра, a loss; потёрь.

Дядя, the uncle; *G. pl.* дядей.
 Броня, a cuirass; броней.
 Пеня, a fine; пеней.
 Ноздря, a nostril; ноздрей.
 Стезя, a footpath; стезей.
 Доля, a portion; долей and доль.
 Заря, the dawn; зарей and зарь.
 Тоня, fishing-net; тоней and тонн.

According to the 23th paradigm (пёсныя) are declined the nouns in *ля* and *ня*, preceded by another consonant, by *ь* or by *й*, which insert in the *genitive plural* the vowel *е* (one single noun takes the vowel *о*), or change *ь* and *й* into *е*. Such are:

Сабля, a sabre; *G. pl.* сабель.
 Басня, a fable; басень.
 Башня, a tower; башень.
 Деревня, a village; деревень.
 Кровля, a roof; кровель.
 Пётля, a running-knot; петьель.
 Земля, the earth; земёлъ (*A. s.* зёмлю).

Объдня, the mass; *G. pl.* объднень.
 Кухня, the kitchen; кухонь.
 Спальня, a dormitory; спальень. [мень.
 Богадельня, an almshouse; богадѣль-
 Швальня, a sewing room; швальень.
 Бойня, a slaughter-house; боень.
 Водопоёйня, a horse-pond; водопоеень.

The substantive земля takes, in the prepositional singular with на, the Slavonian inflection на землѣ, *on the earth*, to be distinguished for на землѣ, *on the ground*.

According to the 24th paradigm (свѣя) are declined those nouns in *я* preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those in *ія*), which form their *genitive plural* in *й*; such are:

Вѣя, the neck; *G. pl.* вѣй.
 Лядвѣя, the hip; лядвѣй.
 Струя, a current; струй.
 Верѣя, a post; верѣй.
 Шѣя, the neck; шей.
 Змѣя, a serpent; змѣй.
 Соѣя, the jay; сой.
 Сбруѣя, an armour; сбруй.

The names of foreign towns, ending in *оа* and *уа*, are declined in the same manner, except in the *accusative*, which they form in *у* (and not in *ю*); e. g. Гѣнуа, Genoa, *A.* Гѣнуу. Мѣнтуа, Mantua, Мѣнтуу. Пѣдуа, Padua, Пѣдуу. Гоа, Goa, Гѣу.

Some nouns in *ая* and *яя*, as: кладовая, *a storehouse*; передняя, *an antechamber*, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 25th paradigm (судья) are declined the nouns in *ья*, which in the *genitive plural* change this termination into *ей*, and if it is contracted from *ія*, into *йй*. Such are:

Ла́дьѧ, a boat; *G. pl.* ладе́й.
 Скаме́ѧ, a bench; скаме́й.
 Статѣ́ѧ, an article; статѣ́й.
 Сви́ньѧ, a pig; свинѣ́й.
 Семѣ́ѧ, the family; семе́й.

Го́стьѧ, a female guest; *G. pl.* го́стей.
 Лгу́ньѧ, a female liar; лгу́ней.
 Свѣ́тъѧ, a female relation; свѣ́тей.
 Ке́льѧ, a cell; ке́лій.
 Игу́меньѧ, an abbess; игу́меній.

According to the 26th paradigm (мо́лніѧ) are declined the nouns in *иѧ*, which in the *dative* and *prepositional singular* take the inflection *и* (instead of *ю*), and which form their *genitive plural* in *іѣ*. Such are:

А́рміѧ, an army, *D.* а́рміи; *G. pl.* А́рміѧ, an element, *D.* стихіи; *G. pl.* а́рміѧ.
 Ко́піѧ, a copy, ко́пи; ко́пій.
 Лі́ліѧ, a lily, лі́ліи; лі́лій.
 Лі́ніѧ, a line, лі́ніи; лі́ній.
 Ко́ме́діѧ, a comedy, ко́ме́ди; ко́ме́дій.
 Трагѣ́діѧ, a tragedy, трагѣ́ди; трагѣ́дій.
 Ві́тіѧ, an orator, ві́ти; ві́тій.

According to the 27th paradigm (стра́сть) are declined the feminine nouns in *ѧ*, observing at the same time the change of *я* into *а* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), and remarking that several of these nouns transfer in the plural the accent to the casual inflections, from the genitive plural downwards. Such are:

Тка́нь, a tissue; *G. pl.* тка́ней.
 Печа́ть, a seal; печате́й.
 Крова́ть, a bedstead; крова́тей.
 Ё́ль, a fir; ё́лей.
 Сви́ръѧ, a pipe; свирѣ́лей.
 Ладо́нь, the palm of the hand; ладо́ней.
 О́сень, the autumn; о́сеней.
 Мече́ть, a mosque; мечете́й.
 Болѣ́знь, a malady; болѣ́зней.
 Добро́дѣтель, virtue; добро́дѣтелей.
 Бро́вь, an eyebrow; *N. pl.* бро́ви, *G.* брове́й.
 Кисти́, a tuft; кисти́, кисте́й.
 Вѣ́тъѧ, a branch; вѣ́тви, вѣ́твей.
 Две́рь, the door; двере́й (*т. дверѣ́м*).
 Ло́шадь, a horse; лоша́дей (*т. дѣ́м*).
 Плеть, a whip; плете́й (*т. плетѣ́м*).
 Но́чь, the night, но́чей; *D.* но́чамъ.
 Печь, a stove, печѣ́й; печѣ́мъ.
 Мышь, a mouse, мышѣ́й; мышѣ́мъ.
 Ве́щь, a thing, ве́щей; ве́щамъ.

According to the 28th paradigm (ложь) are declined five nouns in *ѧ*, which elide the vowel *о* of the nominative in the other cases, except in the instrumental singular; these are:

Вошь, a louse, *G.* вши, *т.* во́шью.
 Ро́жь, rue, рже́, ро́жью.
 Любо́вь, love, *G.* любѣ́й, *т.* любѣ́вью.
 Це́рковь, the church, це́ркви, це́рковью.

The noun це́рковь takes, in the *dative*, *instrumental* and *prepositional plural*, the hard inflection *амѣ*, *ами*, *ахѣ*: церкѣ́амъ, церкѣ́ами, о церкѣ́ахъ. Любо́вь, used as a Christian name, retains the vowel through all the cases, *G.* Любо́ви, &c.

Irregular
nouns.

31. — The *irregular* nouns are such as take in some cases an inflection different to what they ought to have, according to the termination of their nominative singular; or such as form their plural in a particular manner.

1. Several nouns in *з* and *б* take in the *nominative plural* the inflection *а́*, *я́*, with the tonic accent (instead of *ы*, *у*), while the genitive remains in *овъ*, *евъ*, *ей*, and the other cases regular. Such are:

Бѣрегъ, the shore, <i>рл.</i> берега́, берего́въ.	По́гребъ, a cellar, <i>рл.</i> погреба́, -бо́въ.
Бокъ, the flank, бока́.	По́логъ, a curtain, полога́.
Вѣчеръ, the evening, вечера́.	Профѣссоръ, a professor, профессора́.
Голосъ, the voice, голосо́а.	Рукáвъ, a sleeve, рукава́.
Горо́дъ, the town, городá.	Флю́геръ, a weather-cock, флюгера́.
До́кторъ, a doctor, докторá.	Шо́мполь, a ramrod, шомпола́.
Жѣрно́въ, a millstone, жернова́.	Хлѣ́въ, a stall, хлѣва́.
Ка́теръ, a cutter, катера́.	Хо́лодъ, the cold, холода́.
Ки́веръ, a shako, кивера́.	Сто́рожъ, a guard, сторожа́, стороже́й.
Ко́локолъ, a bell, колокола́.	Вѣксель, a bill of exchange, -ля́, -лей.
Ку́черъ, a coachman, кучера́.	Вѣнзе́ль, a monogram, вензеля́.
.Лугъ, a meadow, лугá.	Ёгеръ, a hunter, егеря́.
.Лѣсъ, a forest, лѣса́.	Кре́ндель, a cracknel, кренделя́.
Ма́стеръ, a master, мастера́.	.Лека́рь, a surgeon, лекаря́.
Ми́чманъ, a midshipman, мичмана́.	Пи́сарь, a writer, писаря́.
О́стровъ, an island, острова́.	Фли́гель, wing of a house, флигеля́.
Па́русъ, a sail, паруса́.	Ште́мпель, a stamp, штемцеля́.
По́варъ, a cook, повара́.	Я́корь, an anker, якоря́.

In the same manner *тѣтеревъ*, a grouse, has in *N.* *рл.* тетерева́; but in the genitive *тетерева́й* (instead of *тетерево́въ*).

2. Some nouns in *з*, *б*, *о*, form their *plural* in *ья́*, *овья́*, *ьямъ*, &c., changing the gutturals *з* and *к* before *ь* into *ж* and *ч*. Such are:

Бра́тъ, the brother, <i>рл.</i> братья́, -евъ.	Пру́тъ, a twig, <i>рл.</i> прутья́, прутьевъ́.
Брусь, a beam, брусья́.	Поло́зь, a slide, полозья́.
Кли́нъ, a wedge, клинья́.	Сту́лъ, a chair, сту́лья.
Клокъ, a lock, кло́чья.	Зя́ть, son-in-law, зятя́.
Ко́лосъ, an ear, колосья́.	Звенó, a link, звенья́.
Ко́лъ, a stake, ко́лья.	Кры́ло, a wing, кры́лья.
Комъ, a heap, ко́мья.	Перó, a feather, перья́.
Копы́лъ, a sledge-bar, копы́лья.	Полѣ́но, a billet of wood, полѣ́нья.
Коча́нъ, a head of cabbage, коча́нья.	Помелó, a malkin, помелья́.
.Лубъ, a sheet of bark, лубья́.	Ши́ло, an awl, ши́лья.

3. Some nouns in *ъ* have their *genitive plural* like the nominative singular (instead of *овъ*), e. g.

Алтынъ, three corecks; <i>pl.</i> алтыны, алтынъ.	Рекрутъ, a recruit; <i>pl.</i> рекруты, рекрутъ.
Аршинъ, an ell; аршины, аршинъ.	Сапогъ, a boot; сапоги, сапогъ.
Гренадёръ, a grenadier; гренадёры, -дёръ.	Солдатъ, a soldier; солдаты, солдатъ.
Драгунъ, a dragoon; драгуны, драгунъ.	Турокъ, a Turk; Турки, Турокъ.
Пудъ, a pood; пуды, пудъ.	Уланъ, a hulan; уланы, уланъ.
Разъ, a time; разы, разъ.	Цыганъ, a gipsy; цыганы, цыганъ.
	Чулкъ, a stocking; чулки, чулкъ.
	Грузинъ, a Georgian; Грузины, Грузинъ.

We can however say regularly пять пудовъ, *five poods*; нѣсколько рекрутовъ, *some recruits*. The substantive человекъ, *man*, has also the genitive plural like the nominative singular, but only in junction with a numeral, as пять человекъ, *five men*; in all other cases it is regular; e. g. друзьяи человекоевъ, *the friends of the men* — The substantive саженъ, *a toise*, has likewise in the genitive plural сажень, the accent being transposed; and день, *the day*, in familiar language, takes the same inflection when in junction with a numeral; e. g. семь дѣнь, *seven days* (instead of семь дней).

4. The following nouns form their *plural* in different ways.

Глазъ, the eye, { have *a, ѡ, амъ*, &c.: глаза, глазъ, глазамъ; волоса,
 Волосъ, a hair, { волосъ, волосамъ (and also regularly: волосы).

Баряиъ, a lord, { change *инъ* into *a, ѡ, амъ, ами, атъ*: бара, баръ,
 Господиинъ, master, { барамъ; господа, господъ, господамъ; Татара (and
 Татаринъ, a Tartar, { Татари), Татаръ, Татарамъ, &c.

Хозяинъ, a housekeeper, *plur.* хозяева, хозяевъ, хозяевамъ, &c.

Шурииъ, a brother-in-law, *plur.* шурья, шурьевъ, шурьямъ, &c.

Другъ, a friend, { have their plural in *ья, ей, ѡмъ*, &c. (другъ changes
 Князь, a prince, { *z* into *з*): друзья, друзей, друзьямъ; князь, князей;
 Мужъ, a husband, { мужья, мужей, &c. The latter, in the sense of *man*,
 is regular: мужи, мужей, мужамъ, &c.

Кумъ, a godfather. { form their plural in the same way by inserting the
 Сватъ, a kinsman, { syllable *ов*: кумовья, кумовей; сватовья, сватовей;
 Сынъ, the son, { сыновья, сыновей, &c. Сынъ, with a *figurative* mean-
 ing, is regular: сыны, сыновъ, &c.

Сосѣдъ, a neighbour, { take in the plural the soft inflection *и, ей, ѡмъ*,
 Холѡпъ, a bondman, { &c.: сосѣди, сосѣдей, сосѣdiamъ (and also regular:
 Чѣртъ, the devil, { сосѣды, сосѣдовъ); холѡпи, холѡпей; чѣрти, чертѣй,
 чертямъ, &c.

Сѡлнце, the sun, { take the masculine termination: *ы, евъ, амъ, огъ*,
 Оулако, a cloud, { *овъ, амъ*, &c.: сѡлнцы, сѡлнцевъ; облаки, облаковъ
 Очко, a rip, point, { (and also regular: облака, облакъ); очки, очковъ;
 Ушко, a handle, { ушки, ушковъ, ушкамъ, &c.

Вѣко, the eyelid, { form their plural in *и, ѡ, амъ*, &c.: вѣки, вѣкъ, вѣкамъ;
 Яблоко, an apple, { яблоки, яблокъ (and яблоковъ), яблокамъ, &c.

Небо, heaven, Чудо, a wonder,	{ have in the plural: небеса́, небесѣ́, небесамъ́; чудеса́, чудесѣ́, чудесамъ́, &c. Небо, in the sense of <i>palate</i> , has no plural, and чудо, signifying <i>a monster</i> , is regular: чѹда, чудѣ́, чѹдамъ́, &c.
О́ко, the eye, У́хо, the ear,	{ form their plural in <i>и, ей, амъ</i> , with the permutation of the consonant: очѣ́и, очѣ́й, очамъ́, очамѣ́и; у́ши, у́шѣй, у́шамъ́, у́шѣмѣ́и (instead of <i>ушамѣи</i>). This inflection is properly the Slavonian dual; the plural, which is sometimes used in poetry, is: очеса́, ушеса́
Дитѣ́, a child,	{ which in the singular has preserved the Slavonian declension: <i>G. D. and P. дитѣ́ти, I. дитѣ́темъ and дитѣ́тею</i> , has in plural: <i>N. дѣ́ти, G. and A. дѣ́тѣй, D. дѣ́тямъ, I. дѣ́тѣмѣ́и, P. о дѣ́тяхъ.</i>

Ку́рица, a hen, *plur.* ку́ры, ку́рь, ку́рамъ, &c.

Слю́на, the slaver, *plur.* слю́ни, слюне́й, слюна́мъ, &c., with the soft inflection.

5. Some nouns have a double inflection in the *plural*, the one regular, the other irregular.

a) Some have two inflections in the nominative only, and without any difference in the meaning of the word; such are:

Вѣ́къ, an age, <i>pl.</i> вѣ́ки and вѣ́ка, вѣ́ковъ.	Поя́съ, girdle, <i>pl.</i> поя́сы and поя́са, -совъ.
Го́дь, a year, го́ды and го́да, годо́въ.	Ро́гъ, a horn, ро́ги and ро́га, рого́въ.
До́мъ, a house, до́мы and до́ма, домо́въ.	Снѣ́гъ, snow, снѣ́ги and снѣ́га, снѣ́говъ.
Ко́рпусъ, body, ко́рпусы and корпусѣ́, -совъ.	Сто́гъ, a stack, сто́ги and сто́га, сто́говъ.
Ку́полъ, cupola, ку́полы and купола́, -ловъ.	Стру́гъ, a bark, стру́ги and стру́га, -говъ.
Ме́дъ, honey, ме́ды and меда́, медо́въ.	
О́корокъ, a ham, о́короки and окорока́, -овъ.	Тѣ́ремъ, a room, тѣ́ремы and терема́, Кра́й, the brink, кра́й and кра́я, краёвъ.

б) Others have two inflections through all the cases, the irregular inflection being used where the substantive has a collective meaning; such are:

Ба́тогъ, a stick, <i>pl.</i> бато́ги, бато́говъ, and бато́жья, бато́жьевъ, &c.
Вну́къ, the grandson; вну́ки, вну́ковъ, and вну́чата, вну́чать, &c.
Крю́къ, a hook; крю́ки, крю́ковъ, and крю́чья, крю́чевъ.
Обо́дь, a felloe; ободо́ы, ободо́въ, and ободо́ья, ободо́евъ.
Лоску́тъ, a shred; лоску́ты, лоску́товъ, and лоску́тья, лоску́тьевъ.
Стру́пъ, a scurf; стру́пы, стру́повъ, and стру́пья, стру́пьевъ.
Су́къ, a branch; су́ки, су́ковъ, and су́чья, су́чевъ.
Че́репъ, a potsherd; черепа́, черепо́въ, and чере́нья, чере́ньевъ.
Волды́рь, <i>m.</i> a tubercle; волды́ри, волды́рей, and волды́рья, волды́рьевъ.
Ка́мень, <i>m.</i> a stone; ка́ми, ка́мней, and ка́меня, ка́меневъ.

Корень, *m.* a root; корни, корней, and коренья, кореньевъ.
 Пузырь, *m.* a bladder; пузыри, пузырей, and пузырья, пузырьевъ.
 Пупырь, *m.* a pimple; пупыри, пупырей, and пупырья, пупырьевъ.
 Уголь, *m.* the charcoal; угли, углей, and уголья, угольевъ.
 Дерево, a tree; дерева, деревъ, and деревья, деревьевъ.
 Дыра, a hole; дыры, дыръ, and дырья, дырьевъ.
 Щель, *f.* a chink; щели, щелей, and щельевъ.

c) Others again have two inflections with totally different meanings; such are:

Зубъ, a tooth (in the mouth), *pl.* зѹбы, зубовъ, and tooth (of a saw), зѹбья, зѹбьевъ.
 Капля, a drop (of water), капли, капель, and drops (in medicine), капли, каплей.
 Листъ, a leaf (of paper), листы, листовъ, and a leaf (of a tree), листья, листьевъ.

Мужъ, a man, мѹжи, мужей, and a husband, мужья, мужей.
 Мѣхъ, a fur, мѣхи, мѣховъ, and a pair of bellows, мѣха, мѣховъ.
 Образъ, the form, образы, образовъ, and an image, образа, образовъ.
 Поводъ, a motive, поводы, поводовъ, and a rein, поводья, поводьевъ.
 Судно, a vessel (utensil), судны, суденъ, and a vessel (ship), суда, судовъ.
 Хлѣбъ, a bread, хлѣбы, хлѣбовъ, and a corn, хлѣба, хлѣбовъ.
 Цвѣтъ, a flower, цвѣты, цвѣтовъ, and a colour, цвѣта, цвѣтовъ.

d) Lastly there is one substantive which in the plural has three inflections, a different meaning being conveyed by each; viz.

Колѣно, { a tribe, *pl.* колѣна, колѣнъ, колѣнамъ, &c.
 { the knee, *pl.* колѣни, колѣней, колѣнямъ, &c.
 { a joint (of a plant), *pl.* колѣнья, колѣньевъ, колѣньямы, &c.

6. The declension of the following nouns is quite irregular:

Господъ, the Lord, { is declined like a noun in *г*, with the hard inflection:
 { *G.* Господа, *D.* Господу, *I.* Господомъ; the *vocative*
 { is: Гоподи.

Христосъ, Christ, { cuts off in all the other cases the syllable *ос*: *G.* Христѣ,
 { *D.* Христѹ, *I.* Христомъ, *P.* о Христѣ, *V.* Христѣ.

Дочь, a daughter, { insert in the inflections of the cases the syllable *ер*:
 { *G.* and *D.* дочери and матери, *I.* дочерью and матерью;
 Мать, the mother, { *plur.* *N.* дочери and матери, *G.* дочерей and матерей,
 { *I.* дочерями and матерями, &c.

Пламень, flame, { although masculine, takę in the *genitive*, *dative* and
 Путь, the way, { *prepositional* singular the feminine inflection *и*: пламени,
 { путі; but the instrumental case is regular (пламенемъ,
 { путёмъ).

EXERCISES IN THE DECLENSION OF SUBSTANTIVES.

Nominative and Genitive. The master of the garden and the mistress of the house.
Хозяинъ садъ и хозяйка домъ.

The garden of the master and the house of the mistress.
Садъ хозяинъ и домъ хозяйка.

The roaring of the lions; the song of the nightingale; the
Рыканіе левъ; пѣніе соловѣй;

bellowing of the bull, of the ox and of the cow; the neighing
Мычаніе быкъ, волъ и корова; ржаніе

of the horses; the barking of the dog; the cooing of the pigeons;
лошадь *f*; лай собака; воркованье голубъ *m*;

the cawing of the crows; the croaking of the frogs; the howling
карканье воронъ; кваканье лягушка; вой

of the wolf; the buzzing of the bees, of the cock-chafers and
волокъ; жужжаніе пчелá, жукъ и

of the flies; the bleating of the rams and of the ewes. A chimney
муха; блеяніе барашъ и овца. Каминъ

without fire; windows without panes; groats without butter;
безъ огонь *m*; окно безъ стекло; каша безъ масло;

saddles without stirrups; a charge without ball; islands and
седло безъ стрѣмя; зарядъ безъ пуля; островъ и

meadows without trees; cooks, coachmen and labourers without
лугъ безъ дерево; поваръ, кучеръ и работникъ безъ

work; children without mother; soldiers without muskets;
работá; дитя безъ мать; солдаты безъ ружьё;

muskets without flints; a statue without arms and without
ружьё безъ кремёнъ *m*; статуя безъ рука и безъ

ears; young bears and young lions without hair; vessels
ухо; медвѣженокъ и львенокъ безъ шерсть *f*; корабль *m*

without hammocks; ships without oars; tea without sugar and
безъ койка; судно безъ весло; чай безъ сахаръ и

without cream. A bunch of pens; a dozen of cups, of plates
безъ сливки *f*. Пукъ перо; дюжина чашка, тарелка

and of glasses; five scores of trouts; half a score of melons;
и стаканъ; сотня форель *f*; десятокъ дыня;

a quantity of geese, of ducks and of swans; herds of cattle;
множество гусь *m*, утка и лебедь *m*; стадо скотъ;

studs of horses. The men of antiquity, and the husbands
табунъ лошадь *f*. Мужъ древность *f* и мужъ

of the wives. The flowers of the gardens and the colours
женá. Цвѣтъ садъ и цвѣтъ

of the rainbow. The leaves of paper and the leaves of the trees.
радуга. Листъ бумага и листъ древо.

The teeth of the mouth and the teeth of a comb. The tribes
Зубъ во (*prep.*) ротъ и зубъ у гребень *m*. Колѣно

of the Israelites, the knees of a man, and the joints of plants.
Израильтянинъ, колѣно у человекъ, и колѣно растеніе.

The taking of herrings on the coasts of America has been very
Ловъ сельдь *f* у берегъ Америка былъ очень

profitable to the English, the Swedes, the Dutch and
выгоденъ для (*gen.*) Англичанинъ, Шведъ, Голландецъ и

the French.

Французъ.

Advice to friends. Glory to God. Woe to the enemies. Nominative
Советъ другъ. Слава Богъ. Горе врагъ. and Dative.

The general order to the troops. Obedience to the laws. Give
Приказъ войско. Повиновеніе законъ. Дай

food to the geese, to the hens, to the pigeons and to the
ѣсть гусь *m*, курица, голубъ *m* и

little dogs. To act conformably to the laws of honour. *f*
щенокъ. Поступать соотвѣтственно правило честь.

To live according to his situation. A law given as well
Жить прилично состояніе. Законъ, данный какъ

for the nobles as for the citizens. To be against the wishes дворяніи́, такъ и мѣщани́и. Протѣвѣться желаніе of the children, and the desire of the parents. The books, дѣтѣ, и воля родѣтель. Кни́га, the pens and the papers belong to the scholars, and not перо́ и тетрадь принадлежатъ учени́къ, а не to the masters. The fields and the meadows belong to the учи́тель. По́ле и лу́гъ принадлежатъ father and to the mother, and the gardens, as well as the forests о́тець и мать, а садъ, какъ и лѣсъ, to the sons and to the daughters. To be agreeable to the men сынъ и дочь. Нравѣться мужчи́на and to be disagreeable to the women. The verdure is agreeable и не нравѣться же́нщина. Зѣлень принадлежитъ to the eyes. The pictures please the sisters and the flowers глазъ. Карти́на нравѣтся сестра́, а цвѣтъ the brothers. Useful to the country; agreeable to God and братъ. По́лезный о́течество; прѣятный Бо́гъ и to men; faithful to the sovereign; dear to friends; agreeable лю́ди; вѣрный госуда́рь; любѣзный другъ; ми́лый to children. Man is known by his face, by his voice, by дѣтѣ. Чело́вѣкъ узнаѣтся по ли́цѣ, по го́лосѣ, по his figure, by his walk and by the motions of his body. Tourists ро́сть, по похóдка и по тѣлодви́женіе. Тури́стъ travel in Switzerland, in France, in Italy, in Germany, путеше́ствуютъ по Швейца́ріа, Фра́нція, Ита́ліа, Герма́ніа, in America and in Egypt. Аме́рика а Егѣ́петъ.

Nominative and Accusative. The brothers have bought houses, gardens, a village and Братъ купѣли до́мъ, садъ, дере́вня и fields, and have sold oxen, cows, horses and a carriage. по́ле, а про́дали бы́къ, коро́ва, ло́шадь, и карѣ́та.

To read a fable, draw a picture, write letters, play an air,
 Читать басня, рисовать картина, писать письмо, играть пьеса,

mend pens. To visit the brothers and the sisters, the mothers
 чинить перо. Посещать братья и сестры, мать

and the daughters, the fathers and the sons. To buy a hat
 и дочь, отец и сын. Купить шляпа

and a cap, gloves and shoes, stockings and garters.
 и шапка, перчатка и башмак, чулок и подвязка.

The conqueror has vanquished the troops and has subjected
 Завоеватель победил войско, и покори́л

the people. Peter defeated the Swedes, conquered Esthonia
 народъ. Петръ разбилъ Шведъ, завоевалъ Эстляндія

and Livonia, founded the city of Saint-Petersburg, and civilised
 и Ливляндія, основалъ городъ Санктпетербургъ, и просвѣтилъ

Russia. The Russians have conquered the Tartars, the Turks,
 Россія. Россіянинъ побеждалъ Татаринъ, Турокъ,

the Swedes, the French and the Persian. The rains refresh
 Шведъ, Французъ и Персiянинъ. Дождь *т* освѣжаютъ

the earth, and the frosts destroy the grass-hoppers.
 землѣ, и холодъ истребляютъ саранча (*sing.*).

Children, be attentive! John, come here! Soldiers, Vocative.

Дитя, будьте прилежны! Иванъ, прійди сюда! Воинъ,

fight valliantly! God, preserve the Emperor! Lord,
 сражайтесь храбро! Богъ, спаси (*acc.*) Царь! Господь,

have mercy upon me!

помилуй меня!

The scholars write with a slate-pencil or ^{with a pen} and ^{Nominative and Instrumental.}
 Ученикъ пишутъ грифель *т* или перо *и*

ink. John plays with Alexis and with Basil, and Mary
 чернила *л*. Иванъ играетъ съ Алексѣй и съ Василій, а Марья

plays with Sophia and with Amy. A tart with almonds;
 играетъ съ Софья и съ Любовь. Пирогъ съ миндаль *т*;

pots with flowers; a basin of water; a man of wit and горшóкъ съ цвѣтъ; кáдка съ водá; человѣкъ съ умъ и of genius; a gallery of pictures. Towns with a fortress and съ рѣнiй; галерéя съ картинá. Гóродъ съ кремль *m* и a port; / trees with leaves, flowers and fruits; shakos with гáвань *f*; дѣрево съ листь, цвѣтъ и плодъ; кiверъ съ plumes; a room with doors; bread with salt; water with султáнъ; кóмната съ дверь *f*; хлѣбъ съ соль *f*; водá съ wine; wine with water; professors with pupils; a letter with винó; винó съ водá; профéссоръ съ ученикъ; письмó съ money. To draw with a pencil, to paint with a brush and дѣньги *f*. Рисовáть карандашъ, писáть кистъ *f* и colours. The shop-keeper trades in tallow, in soap, in milk, крáска. Купéць торгúеть сáло, мы́ло, молоко́, in flour, in groats, in wines, in beer, in cloth, in linen and мука́, крупá, винó, пiво, сукно́, полотно́ и in laces, and the neighbours of the shop-keeper trade in oxen, крúжево, а сосѣдъ купéць торгúютъ воль, in sheep and in horses. Palaces with towers; churches with барáнь и лóшадъ *f*. Дворéць съ бáшня; цѣрковь *f* съ steeples; houses with windows; buildings with galleries, колоко́льня; домъ съ окно́; здáние съ галерéя; regiments with colours. The mountains abound in gold, полкъ съ знáмя. Горá изобилúютъ зóлото, in silver, in copper, in iron, in quick-silver and in lead. серебрó, мѣдь *f*, желѣзо, ртуть *f* и свинéць.

Nominative
and Prepo-
sitional.

The fables of the bull and the ram, of the ass and the Бáсня о быкъ и барáнь, объ осѣль и nightingale; of the cicada and the ant; of the oak and соловей; о кузнéчикъ и муравей; о дубъ и the reed; of the fox and the crow; of the wolf and the lamb. тростни́къ; о лиси́ца и вóронъ; о волкъ и ягнѣнокъ.

The tales of the guardian-angel, of John and Mary; the
Ска́зка объ́ а́нгель-хра́нитель, объ́ Ива́нь и Ма́рья;

histories of Sergius the hermit; of the hero and the genius.
повѣсть о Сѣргіи́ пу́стынникѣ; о ге́роѣ и ге́ніи́.

To speak of games, of lessons, of the time, of the place, of
Говори́тъ объ́ игра́, объ́ уро́къ, о вре́мя, о мѣ́сто, объ́
circumstances. In the work there is said a great deal about
обсто́ятельство. Въ сочи́неніе говори́тъ мно́го о

honour and infamy, about virtue and vice, about courage
честь и безче́стіе, о до́бродѣ́тель и поро́къ, о хра́брость

and pusillanimity. In the water live the fishes, the frogs and
и мало́ду́шіе. Въ вода́ живу́тъ рыба́, лягу́шка и

the mollusca; and in the forests live the lions, the bears,
слизе́нь *m*; и въ ле́съ живу́тъ ле́въ, ме́двѣ́дъ *m*,

the foxes and the hares.

лиси́ца и за́ецъ.

The books of the scholar please the master. The light The different cases.
Кни́га уче́никъ нра́вятся (*dat.*) учи́тель. Свѣ́тъ

of the sun illumines the earth with its rays. The colours of
со́лнце оза́ряетъ зе́мля́ лу́чь. Цвѣ́тъ

the rose are agreeable to the eyes. The friends of humanity
ро́за (*суть*) прі́ятны гла́зь. Другъ че́ловѣ́чество

do good to men. In the garden flourish roses with
дѣла́ють до́бро лю́ди. Въ (*prep.*) са́дѣ цвѣ́туть ро́за съ (*prep.*)

thorns; for there is no rose without thorns. The children
шипъ; и́бо нѣ́тъ (*gen.*) ро́за безъ (*instr.*) шипъ. Дѣ́тя

wash themselves with the water of the river. A glass of
умы́ва́ются вода́ рѣ́ка. Ста́канъ съ (*instr.*)

water is on the table of the room. Tears of joy glisten
вода́ стои́тъ на (*prep.*) сто́лъ ко́мната. Сле́за ра́дость блес́тятъ

in the eyes of the mother. The glory of the wicked is
въ (*prep.*) гла́зь ма́ть. Сла́ва зло́дѣ́й (*есть*)

without stability; but the names of the beneficent shine
непродолжительна; но імя благодѣтель сіяютъ

in eternity. Happiness on earth consists in
въ (*prep.*) вѣчность. Счастье на (*prep.*) землѣ состоитъ въ (*prep.*)

tranquillity of mind and in purity of conscience. Young people
спокойствіе духъ и въ чистотѣ совѣсть *f.* Юношѣ

love the song of the nightingale, on the bank of a river,
любятъ пѣніе соловей, на (*prep.*) берегъ ручей,

by light of the moon. To tell the truth is the duty
при (*prep.*) свѣтъ лунѣ. Говорить правда есть долгъ

of children. To love God with heart and soul. The ants and
дѣтя. Любить Богъ сердце и душѣ. Муравей и

the beavers may serve as a pattern to man. An excursion
бобръ могутъ служить (*instr.*) примѣръ человекъ. Поѣздка

to Moscow and to Kiew. The entrance of the room
въ (*acc.*) Москвѣ и въ Кіевѣ. Входъ въ (*acc.*) библіотека

of reading (reading-room). Give to the master the book
для (*gen.*) чтеніе. Подѣй учитель тетрадь

of verses on the occasion of the feast. One must rise
со (*instr.*) стихъ на (*acc.*) случай праздникъ. Надобно вставать

in the morning, work in the day, rest in the evening, and
(*instr.*) утро, работать день *m*, отдыхать вечеръ, и

sleep at night. The roar of canons and the sound of bells
спать ночь *f.* Громъ пушка и звонъ колоколъ

announced to the citizens the arrival of the conqueror
возвѣстили гражданъ о (*prep.*) прибытіе побѣдитель

of the enemies of the country.

врагъ отечество.

THE ADJECTIVE.

32. — The *adjectives* (прилагательныя имена) Division of the adjectives. in the Russian language are of three kinds: 1) The *qualifying* (качественныя) adjectives, as: чѣрный кафтанъ, *a black coat*; тихое дитя, *a quiet child*; весёлая жизнь, *a joyous life*. 2) The *possessive* (притяжательныя) adjectives, as: отцѣвъ сынъ, *the father's son*; лѣсъя шкура, *a fox skin*; золотое кольцо, *a gold ring*; лѣтний садъ, *the summer garden*. 3) The *numeral* (числительныя) adjectives, as: два стола, *two tables*; второй мѣсяцъ, *the second month*.

To the adjectives belong also the *possessive*, *demonstrative*, *interrogative* and other pronouns, as also the *participles*, which are at times used as simple adjectives. The *Numeral* adjectives, which in Russian have their peculiar inflections, will be treated of in a separate article.

33. — The *qualifying* adjectives, or such as express the quality of an object, end in *ый* and *ій*, or, with the accent, in *ой* (neut. *ое* and *ее*, fem. *ая* and *яя*); e. g. добрый, *good*; лёгкій, *light*; синій, *blue*; сухой, *dry*; большой, *great*. Qualifying adjectives.

34. — The *possessive* adjectives, most of which are peculiar to the Russian language, are divided into *individual*, *common*, *material* and *circumstantial*. Possessive adjectives.

1. The *individual* or *special* (личныя, частныя), possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to an individual, or in other words to an animate or personified being, end in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ* and *ынъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), or in *ь* (neut. *е*, fem. *я*), and are formed from the names of the objects in question by changing *ъ* and *о* into *овъ*

(or into *евѣ* after the lingual or a hissing consonant); *й* and *ь* into *евѣ*; *а*, *я* and *ь* into *инѣ*, and *ѹа* into *ѹинѣ*, remembering however that in this formation the adjective follows the genitive inflection of the substantive; e. g. *сыновѣ*, *the son's*; *Марковѣ*, *Mark's*; *Львовѣ*, *Leon's*; *Христовѣ*, *Christ's*; *стражеѣ*, *the guardian's*; *отцевѣ*, *the father's*; *Андрееѣ*, *Andrew's*; *царевѣ*, *the king's*; *Никитинѣ*, *Nicetas's*; *дядинѣ*, *the uncle's*; *свекровинѣ*, *mother-in-law's*; *материнѣ*, *the mother's*; *лѣвицынѣ*, *the girl's* (from *сынѣ*, *Марко*, *Левѣ*, *gen. Льва*, *Христосѣ*, *gen. Христа*, *стражѣ*, *отцевѣ*, *gen. отца*, *Андрѣй*, *царѣ*, *Никита*, *дядя*, *свекровѣ*, *мать*, *gen. матери*, *дѣвицѣ*). The termination *ь* is only found in the adjective *Господень*, *the Lord's* (from *Господѣ*), and in some few others in the ecclesiastical Slavonian.

To the above rule the following are exceptions: *Яковлевѣ*, *James's*; *братинѣ*, *the brother's*; *мужинѣ*, *the husband's*; and also *Божіи*, *God's*, formed from *Яковѣ*, *братѣ*, *мужѣ* and *Богѣ*. — We have still to remark that it is from these individual possessive adjectives that the patronymics, of which we have already spoken (§ 21), are formed; e. g. *Ивановичѣ* and *Ивановна*, *John's son and daughter*; *Павловичѣ* and *Павловна*, *Paul's son and daughter*; *Яковлевичѣ* and *Яковлевна*, *James's son and daughter*; *Никитичѣ* and *Никитична*, *Nicetas's son and daughter*.

2. The *common* or *generic* (*общія*, *родовыя*) possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to all the individuals of the same species, have one principal termination, viz. *иѣ*, *овиѣ* or *евиѣ* (neut. *еѣ*, fem. *ѣѣ*), and some particular terminations; these are: *скіиѣ*, *ныиѣ*, *иниѣ*, *овиѣ*, *ниѣ* (neut. *еѣ* and *еѣ*, fem. *ѣѣ* and *ѣѣ*), and are formed from the names of animate, inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. *рыбіиѣ*, *of a fish*; *медвѣжіиѣ*, *of a bear*; *птичіиѣ*, *of*

a bird; клопо́вий, *of a bug*; конё́вий, *of a horse*; ското́вскій, *of cattle*; гу́сий, *of a goose*; домо́вый, *domestic*; паро́вой, *of steam*; рѣ́чной, *fluvial*; ду́шевнѣй, *of the soul*; жи́зненнѣй, *vital*; сыно́внѣй, *filial* (from рѣ́ба, медвѣ́дь, птѣ́ца, клопъ, конь, скотъ, гусь, домъ, паръ, рѣ́ка, душа́, жизнь, сынъ).

To the individual and common possessive adjectives belong also several Russian family names; e. g. Дми́триевъ, Пу́шкинъ, Завадо́вскій, as also several names of towns and villages; e. g. Ка́шинъ, Боро́дино, Смоле́нскъ, &c.

3. The *material* (вещёственнѣй) possessive adjectives, which indicate the material of which a thing is made, are formed from the names of material objects by means of the terminations *ый, ный, яный, янный* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), as: золо́то́й, *of gold*; желе́знѣй, *of iron*; сере́брянѣй, *of silver*; дере́внѣй, *of wood* (from зо́лото, желе́зо, серебро́, дере́во).

4. The *circumstantial* (обсто́ятельственнѣй) possessive adjectives are formed from nouns and adverbs signifying *time* and *place*, by means of the terminations *нѣй* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*), and in the names of months, by the termination *скѣй* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*); as: лѣ́тнѣй, *of summer*; ны́нѣшнѣй, *actual*; та́мошнѣй, *of this place*; ма́ртовскѣй, *of March*; ию́льскѣй, *of July* (from лѣ́то, ны́нѣ, тамъ, ма́ртъ, ию́ль).

35. — The properties of the adjectives in Russian are: the *gender* (родъ), the *number* (число́), the *case* (паде́жъ), the *apocope of the termination* (усть-чѣ́нѣе оконча́нѣя), and the *degrees of signification* or *degrees of the qualities* (сте́пени ка́чествъ), and

Properties of
adjectives.

these properties are all marked by particular inflections.

Gender,
number,
case.

36. — As the adjective must agree in gender, number and case with the substantive which it qualifies, it has three terminations to indicate the difference of *gender*, two for the different *numbers* and seven for the *cases*.

Апоскоп
of the
termination.

37. — As the adjectives are used for two different purposes, firstly simply to qualify the noun to which they belong, as: *добрый человек*, a good man; *новая шляпа*, a new hat; and secondly to form the attribute of the proposition, as: *человек (есть) добр*, the man is good; *шляпа была нова*, the hat was new; they have in Russian two different terminations, the one full (полное), the other apocopated (усечённое). These two terminations are as follows:

SINGULAR.					
	Masculine.		Neuter.		Feminine.
Full term:	ый (ой),	ий;	ое,	ее;	ая, яя;
Апос. term:	ъ,	ь;	о,	е;	а, я;
Examples:	{ новый, синий; новое, синее; новая, синяя; новъ, синь; ново, синё; нова́, синя́; }				

PLURAL.			
	Masculine.	Neut. and Fem.	
Full term:	ые,	ие;	ья, ия.
Апос. term:	ы,	и;	ы, и.
Examples:	{ новые, синие; новья, синия. новы, сини; новы́, сини́. }		

These two examples *новый*, new, and *синий*, blue, show that the apocopated is formed from the full termination, by changing *ый* and *ий*, (or *ой* with the accent) into *ъ* and *ь*, according to

the nature of the preceding consonant, for the masculine, and by cutting of the final vowel in the other inflections. In this formation, the vowel *e* or *o* is inserted between two consonants in the masculine, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, and the semi-vowels *b* and *ŭ* are changed into *e*, observing that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in the inflections of the full termination, is often transposed in the apocopated termination, sometimes to the inserted vowel of the masculine, sometimes to the first syllable, at other times to the inflection of the feminine, and occasionally to that of the neuter and the plural; e. g.

бѣлый, white, <i>афос. term.</i> бѣлъ, лѣ, лѣ.	вѣрный, true, <i>афос.</i> вѣренъ, рно, рна.
здоровый, wholesome, здоровъ, ово, ова.	тяжкій, heavy, тяжекъ, жко, жка.
дорогой, dear, дорогъ, ого, ога.	истинный, veritable, истиненъ, нно, ннна.
великій, great, великъ, ѣко, ѣка.	древній, ancient, древень, вне, вня.
дюжій, stout, дюжъ, жѣ, жѣ.	полный, full, полонъ, лно, лна.
хорошій, good, хорошъ, ошѣ, оша.	злой, evil, золь, зю, зла.
живой, live, живъ, ѣво, ѣва.	крѣпкій, strong, крѣпокъ, пко, пка.
сухой, dry, сухъ, сѣхо, сѣха.	лёгкій, light, легокъ, гко, гка.
высокій, high, высокъ, окѣ, ока.	горькій, bitter, горекъ, рко, рка.
быстрый, rapid, быстръ, тро, тра.	сильный, vigorous, снѣнъ, лно, лна.
твёрдый, firm, твёрдъ, ёрдо, рдѣ.	спокойный, quiet, спокоенъ, ойно, ойна.

The following are exceptions to this rule: *достойный*, *worthy*; *блаженный*, *happy*; *надменный*, *proud*, and *совершенный*, *perfect*, which form: *достойнъ*, *ойно*, *ойна*; *блаженъ*, *надменъ*, *совершенъ*, *ённо*, *ённа*.

The qualifying adjectives have both terminations, except *радъ*, *joyous*, and *гораздъ*, *except*, which have only the apocopated, while *большой*, *great*, and *меньшой*, *little*, have only the full termination. The individual possessive adjectives have only the apocopated termination, while the material and circumstantial possessive adjectives have only the full termination. The same is the case with several common possessive adjectives, with the exception of such as end in *иѣ*, which in the singular have the full, and in the plural the apocopated termination.

38. — The qualifying adjectives have five degrees ^{Degrees of signification.} of signification, viz. the *positive*, the *comparative*, the *superlative*, the *diminutive* and the *augmentative*.

1. The *positive* (положительная стéпень) is indicated by the ordinary terminations, full and apocopated; e. g. бѣлый and бѣлъ, *white*; сухой and сухъ, *dry*; синій and синь, *blue*.

2. The *comparative* (сравнительная стéпень) is marked in the full termination by the inflections *пѣйшій, айшій, шій* (neut. *ее*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated termination by the invariable inflections *пѣ* and *е*, and is formed in three different ways:

1) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by any consonant except a guttural, into *пѣйшій* for the full, and into *пѣ* for the apocopated termination; e. g.

бѣлый, white, *comp.* бѣлѣйшій and бѣлѣ, whiter.
 слабый, weak, слабѣйшій and слабѣ, weaker.
 живой, live, живѣйшій and живѣ, more live.
 полный, full, полнѣйшій and полнѣ, more full.

From this rule are excepted the following adjectives, which though they have the full termination *пѣйшій*, have the apocopated in *е*, changing at the same time the mutable consonant.

богатый, rich, *comp. full term.* богатѣйшій, *apoc. term.* богаче.
 дешёвый, cheap, дешёвѣйшій, дешёвле.
 густой, thick, густѣйшій, гуще.
 красивый, handsome, краснѣйшій, краше.

(No красивый, *red*, forms regularly: краснѣе.)

крутой, steep, крутѣйшій, круче.
 поздний, tardy, позднѣйшій, позже.
 простой, simple, простѣйшій, проще (and простѣе.)
 твёрдый, firm, твердѣйшій, твёрже.
 толстый, thick, толстѣйшій, толще.
 частый, frequent, частѣйшій, чаще.
 чистый, pure, чистѣйшій, чище.

The adjectives горячій, *burning*; лысый, *bald*; сізый, *dove-coloured*; свѣжій, *fresh*; and others in *зый, сый, жій, чій, шій*, have only the apocopated termination *пѣ*: горячѣ, лысѣ, сізѣ, свѣжѣ.

2) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by one of the gutturals (г, к, х), into *аѣиѣ* for the full, and into *е* for the apocopated termination, permuting the consonant at the same time; e. g.

строгій, strict, *comp.* строжайшій and стрѣже, stricter.

крѣпкій, strong, . . . крѣпчайшій and крѣпче, stronger.

вѣтхій, old, . . . вѣтшайшій and вѣтше, older.

Exceptions. — Most of the adjectives in *ѣиѣ*, *кѣиѣ*, *хѣиѣ*, have not the full termination of the comparative; and also the following adjectives form their comparatives in different ways:

долгій, long, *comp.* full term. должайшій, *apoc. term.* долѣше.

дорогой, dear, дражайшій, дороѣже.

далёкій and дальній, far, . . . дальнѣйшій, дальше.

близкій, near, ближайшій, ближе.

глубокій, deep, глубочайшій, глубѣже.

горькій, bitter, горчайшій, горче.

(No горькій, *bad*, takes the Slav. inflection горшій and горше.)

короткій and краткій, short, . . . кратчайшій, короче.

рѣдкій, rare, рѣдчайшій, рѣже.

сладкій, sweet, сладчайшій, слаще.

тонкій, thin, тончайшій, тоньше.

тяжкій, heavy, тяжчайшій, тяжче.

широкій, broad, широчайшій, шире.

гадкій, dirty, } These five { гаѣже.

гладкій, smooth, } have not the { глаѣже.

жидкій, liquid, } full term. { жѣже.

узкій, narrow, } of the com- { ѣже.

слабкій, slack, } parative. { слаѣже.

3) The inflection *ѣиѣ* for the comparative is only found in the following adjectives, three of which take their comparative from another root:

высокій, high; *comp.* full term. вышній, *apoc. term.* выше.

молодой, young; младшій, молодѣе.

низкій, low; низшій, ниже.

старый, old; старшій and старѣйшій, старѣе and старѣе.

худой, bad; худшій, хуже.

великій (and большій), great; большій, больше.

малый (and меньшій), little; меньшій, меньше.

хорошій, good; лучшій, лучше.

1. Care must be taken not to confound the comparative of the adjectives *дольше*, *longer*; *тоьше*, *finer*; *дальше*, *more distant*; *больше*, *greater*; *меньше*, *less*, with that of the adverbs *дольше*, *longer*; *тоьше*, *finer*; *дальше*, *further*; *больше*, *more*; *меньше*, *less*. But this difference exists only in the above five words, the comparative of the adverbs being in every other instance similar to that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination.

2. The apocopated termination of the comparative sometimes takes the preposition *по*, which softens and diminishes the force; e. g. *побъльше*, *a little whiter*; *потоьше*, *a little finer*; *получше*, *a little better*.

3. Such adjectives as want one of the terminations of the comparative, supply its place with the adverb *больше* before the positive; e. g. *больше узкий*, *narrower*; *больше жидкий*, *more liquid*; *больше радъ*, *more joyous*; *больше гораздъ*, *more expert*.

3. The *superlative* (превосходная стéпень) in Russian is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the four following adjectives:

великий, great; *compar.* *большій*; *superl.* *величайшій*, greatest.
высокий, high; *высшій*; *высочайшій*, highest.
малый, little; *меньшій*; *малѣйшій*, least.
низкий, low; *низшій*; *нижайшій*, lowest.

In all the other adjectives, in the full termination, the superlative is expressed by that of the comparative, the words *изъ всѣхъ*, *of all*, being understood, or the particle *най* being placed before it, or also by that of the positive, placing before it the words *самый* (*n.* *самое*, *f.* *самая*), as: *легчайшій* (*изъ всѣхъ*), *наилегчайшій* or *самый лёгкий*, *the lightest*; *лучшій* (*изъ всѣхъ*), *наилучшій*, or *самый лучший* (improperly, for *самый хорошій*), *the best*. In the apocopated termination the superlative is the same as the comparative, adding the word *всѣхъ* or *всего*, e. g. *всѣхъ легче*, *the lightest*; *всѣхъ лучше*, *the best*; *всего важнее*, *the most important*; *всего труднее*, *the most difficult*.

4. The *diminutive* degree (уменьшительная степень) is used to mark the diminution of quality, indicating either a want or smallness of any quality in an object, or a softening of the force of the quality, and also for the agreement of the adjective with the diminutive noun; e. g. *бѣловѣтѣя чернила*, *whitish ink*; *рыжесенькая лошадка*, *a little bay horse*; *маленькая дѣвочка*, *a little young girl*. The diminutive adjective in the former case ends, in the full termination, in *овѣтѣый* or *евѣтѣый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated in *овѣтѣ* or *евѣтѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), and in the latter case, in the full termination, it ends in *онькій* and *енькій* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated, in *онекѣ* and *енекѣ* (neut. *нѣко*, fem. *нѣка*); e. g.

бѣлый, white; *dim.* *бѣловѣтѣый* or *бѣловѣтѣ*, and *бѣленькій* or *бѣленекѣ*.
тѣплый, hot; . . . *тепловѣтѣый* or *тепловѣтѣ*, and *тѣпленькій* or *теплѣнекѣ*.
сухой, dry; . . . *суховѣтѣый* or *суховѣтѣ*, and *сѣхонькій* or *сѣхонекѣ*.
красный, red; . . . *красновѣтѣый* or *-новѣтѣ*, and *красненькій* or *-нѣнекѣ*.
синій, blue; . . . *синевѣтѣый* or *синевѣтѣ*, and *сѣненькій* or *синѣнекѣ*.
рыжій, bay; . . . *рыжевѣтѣый* or *рыжевѣтѣ*, and *рыженькій* or *рыженекѣ*.

The diminutive ending *овѣтѣый*, *евѣтѣый*, must not be confounded with the similar ending of the positive, which belongs to the qualifying adjectives; e. g. *виновѣтѣый*, *culpable*; *угловѣтѣый*, *angular*; *ноздревѣтѣый*, *porous*; *угревѣтѣый*, *scaly*.

5. The *augmentative* degree (увеличительная степень) is used in the qualifying adjectives to express the abundance or excess of quality, and is formed in the full termination by the prepositive particle *пре*, and in the apocopated by the endings *ѣхонекѣ* and *ѣшенекѣ*, or *оѣхонекѣ* and *оѣшенекѣ* (neut. *нѣко*, fem. *нѣка*); e. g.

бѣлый, white; *augm.* *пребѣлый*, or *бѣлѣхонекѣ* and *бѣлѣшенекѣ*, quite white.
сухой, dry; . . . *пресухой*, or *сѣхонекѣ* and *сѣхонѣнекѣ*, very dry.
лѣгкій, light; . . . *прелѣгкій*, or *лѣгѣхонекѣ* and *лѣгѣшенекѣ*, very light.
малый, little; . . . *премалый*, or *малѣхонекѣ* and *малѣшенекѣ*, very little.

DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

FIRST.			SECOND.			THIRD.		
FULL TERMINATION.			APOCOPATED TERMINATION.			MIXED TERMINATION.		
CASSES:								
NUMBERS:								
SINGULAR.								
N.			Masc. g.			Masc. g.		
G.			Neut. g.			Neut. g.		
D.			Fem. g.			Fem. g.		
A.								
I.								
P.								
<i>Masc. gender.</i> мѣ(о)и ѣ(о)и аго аго оуу еуу like the N. or G.			<i>Neut. gender.</i> ое ее аго аго оуу еуу ое ее мѣ мѣ оуу еуу			<i>Fem. gender.</i> ая ая оѣ(а)и еѣ(а) оѣ еѣ юю юю ою(о)и ею(е)и оѣ еѣ		
			<i>Masc. gender.</i> ѣ б а я у ю like the N. or G.			<i>Neut. gender.</i> о е а я у ю е		
			<i>Fem. gender.</i> а а оѣ еѣ оѣ еѣ ю ю ою(о)и ею(е)и оѣ еѣ			<i>Masc. g.</i> ѣѣ бѣѣ бѣѣ бѣѣ N. or G.		
			<i>Neut. g.</i> мѣ мѣ оуу еуу оуу еуу			<i>Neut. g.</i> бе (ѣе) бѣѣ бѣѣ бе		
			<i>Fem. g.</i> ою(о)и ею(е)и оѣ еѣ			<i>Fem. g.</i> бѣ (ѣѣ) бѣѣ бѣѣ бѣѣ		
</								

The adjective прекрасный, *beautiful*, in which the particle *пре* has an augmentative meaning, is used as a simple adjective to be distinguished from красный, *red*; but it is not the same case with прелестный, *charming*, derivated from прелесть, *charm*.

39. — The Russian adjectives have three *declensions*; the *first* for adjectives of the *full termination*, the *second* for those of the *apocopated*, and the *third* for those of the *mixed termination*, i. e. for such common possessive adjectives in *ий* (neut. *е*, fem. *ья*), as have some inflections of the full and others of the apocopated termination. Each of these declensions has three endings for three genders, masculine, feminine and neuter, corresponding to the three declensions of substantives, as is seen in the opposite table.

Declension
of adjectives.

In declining adjectives according to this table, attention is required to the following observations:

1. The inflection *ой* of the *nominative* singular masculine, instead of *ый*, or of *ий* preceded by a guttural or a hissing consonant, is only used when the accent is on the last syllable; e. g. слѣпой, *blind*; восковой, *of wax*; глухой, *deaf*; чужой, *foreign*; большой, *great* (instead of *слѣпый, восковой, глухий, чужий, большй*).

2. The inflection *ья* or *ія* of the *genitive* singular feminine is Slavonian, and is only used in poetry, or in religious prose; e. g. крѣтость святѣя жизни, *the sweetness of a holy life*; Соборъ Казанскіа Божіа Матери, *the Cathedral of Our-Lady of Casan*.

3. The inflection *ой*, *ей* or *ею* of the *instrumental* singular feminine is a contraction of *ою*, *ею* or *ею* in use in familiar language.

4. The inflection *ъ*, of the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter of the II declension, is confined to the names of families and towns, and the inflection *омъ* to the individual possessive adjectives, and to the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination. (See Paradigms 9, 10, 11, 12, 13.)

PARADIGMS OF THE THREE

S I N G U

Masculine and neuter genders.

		S I N G U							
		Masculine and neuter genders.							
		Nomin. and Vocative.		Genitive.	Dative.	Accus.	Instr.	Prep.	
FIRST.	FULL.	1.	{ <i>м. нѡвый</i> , new	}	нѡв-аго	ому .		ымъ . .	омъ .
			{ <i>н. нѡвое</i>	}					
		2.	{ <i>м. мѡгкій</i> , tender	}	мѡгк-аго	ому .		ымъ . .	омъ .
			{ <i>н. мѡгкое</i>	}					
		3.	{ <i>м. сѣній</i> , blue	}	сѣн-аго	ему .		ымъ . .	емъ .
			{ <i>н. сѣнее</i>	}					
		4.	{ <i>м. свѣжій</i> , fresh	}	свѣж-аго	ему .		ымъ . .	емъ .
			{ <i>н. свѣжее</i>	}					
SECOND.	APOCOPATED.	5.	(Графъ) Толстой		Толст-аго . . .	ому .		ымъ . .	омъ .
		6.	<i>м. портной</i> , a tailor . .		портн-аго . . .	ому .		ымъ . .	омъ .
		7.	<i>н. жаркое</i> , a roast . . .		жарк-аго . . .	ому .		ымъ . .	омъ .
		8.	. . . . .		. . . . .	. . . . .		. . . . .	. . . . .
		9.	{ <i>м. царевъ</i> , the king's . .	}	царев-а	у .		ымъ . .	омъ .
			{ <i>н. царевѡ</i>	}					
		10.	{ <i>м. бѣлѡ</i> , white	}	бѣл-а	у .		ымъ . .	омъ .
			{ <i>н. бѣло</i>	}					
THIRD.	MIXED.	11.	(Князь) Репнинъ		Репнин-а . . .	у .		ымъ . .	ѣ . .
		12.	(городъ) Кашинъ		Кашин-а . . .	у .		ымъ . .	ѣ . .
		13.	(село) Бородинѡ		Бородин-а . .	у .		ымъ . .	ѣ . .
		14.	. . . . .		. . . . .	. . . . .		. . . . .	. . . . .
		15.	{ <i>м. Господень</i> , the Lord's .	}	Господн-я . . .	ю . .		ымъ . .	емъ .
			{ <i>н. Господне</i>	}					
		16.	{ <i>м. синѡ</i> , blue	}	син-я	ю . .		ымъ . .	емъ .
			{ <i>н. синѣ</i>	}					
		17.	{ <i>м. рыбій</i> , of fish	}	рыб-ьяго . . .	ьему		ымъ .	ьемъ
			{ <i>н. рыбье</i>	}					

The following observations, relative to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the adjectives, are important:

1. All the inflections of the full and of the mixed termination, i. e. in the 1st and 3rd declension, retain the accentuation of the nominative singular masculine.

2. In the apocopated termination, i. e. in the 2nd declension, the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the nominative feminine, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural. The oblique cases of the apocopated termination either retain the accentuation of the nominative, or transfer the accent to the last syllable.

DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

L A R.	P L U R A L.
<i>Feminine gender.</i>	<i>For the three genders.</i>
<i>N. and V. G. D. and P. Acc. Instr.</i>	<i>Nom. and Voc. Gen. and Pr. Dat. Accus. Instr.</i>
но́в-ая . . . ой . . ую . . ою .	<div> <div> <div>т. но́в-ые . .</div> <div>н. ф. но́в-ья . .</div> </div> <div> <div>но́в-ые . .</div> <div>но́в-ья . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ыхъ . . .</div> <div>ымъ . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ими</div> </div> </div>
ма́гк-ая . . . ой . . ую . . ою .	<div> <div> <div>т. ма́гк-іе . .</div> <div>н. ф. ма́гк-ія . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ма́гк-іе . .</div> <div>ма́гк-ія . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ихъ . . .</div> <div>имъ . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ими</div> </div> </div>
си́н-яя . . . ей . . юю . . ею .	<div> <div> <div>т. си́н-іе . .</div> <div>н. ф. си́н-ія . .</div> </div> <div> <div>си́н-іе . .</div> <div>си́н-ія . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ихъ . . .</div> <div>имъ . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ими</div> </div> </div>
свѣ́ж-ая . . . ей . . ую . . ею . (Гра́финя)	<div> <div> <div>т. свѣ́ж-іе . .</div> <div>н. ф. свѣ́ж-ія . .</div> </div> <div> <div>свѣ́ж-іе . .</div> <div>свѣ́ж-ія . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ихъ . . .</div> <div>имъ . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ими</div> </div> </div>
Толст-а́я . . . ой . . ую . . ою .	<div> <div> <div>(Гра́фы) Толст-ые . .</div> </div> <div> <div>Толст-ые . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ыхъ . . .</div> <div>ымъ . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ыми</div> </div> </div>
.	<div> <div>портн-ые . . .</div> <div>ыхъ . . .</div> <div>ымъ . .</div> <div>ыми</div> </div>
.	<div> <div>жарк-ія</div> <div>ихъ . . .</div> <div>имъ . .</div> <div>ими</div> </div>
кладов-а́я . . . ой . . ую . . ою . a storehouse.	<div> <div>кладов-ья</div> <div>ыхъ . . .</div> <div>ымъ . .</div> <div>ыми</div> </div>
царѣв-а . . . ой . . у . . . ою .	<div> <div>царѣв-ы</div> <div>ыхъ . . .</div> <div>ымъ . .</div> <div>ыми</div> </div>
бѣл-а́ ой . . у́ . . . ою .	<div> <div>бѣл-ы́</div> <div>ыхъ . . .</div> <div>ымъ . .</div> <div>ыми</div> </div>
(Кня́зья) Репни́-а́ . . . ой . . у́ . . . ою .	<div> <div> <div>(Кня́зья) Репни́-ы́ . .</div> </div> <div> <div>Репни́-ы́ . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ыхъ . . .</div> <div>ымъ . .</div> </div> <div> <div>ыми</div> </div> </div>
.
(дерѣвья) . . . . .	. . . . .
Му́рин-а . . . ой . . у . . . ою .	. . . . .
Госпо́дн-я . . . ей . . ю . . . ою .	<div> <div>Госпо́дн-и</div> <div>ихъ . . .</div> <div>имъ . .</div> <div>ими</div> </div>
син-а́ ей . . ю . . . ёю .	<div> <div>син-и́</div> <div>ихъ . . .</div> <div>имъ . .</div> <div>ими</div> </div>
ры́б-ья ѡей . . ѡю . . ѡею	<div> <div>ры́б-ьн</div> <div>ьихъ . . .</div> <div>ьимъ . .</div> <div>ьими</div> </div>

The *accusative masculine*, singular and plural, of the adjectives is like the *nominative*, when the noun, which they qualify, designates an inanimate or abstract object, as is also the case with the substantives; and it is like the *genitive*, when the noun designates an animate being, even when the accusative of the noun in question may not happen to be the same as the genitive, as is the case with the masculine substantives of the IIIrd declension; ехъ мы любимъ вѣрнаго слугѣ, we love the faithful servant; мы любимъ вѣрныхъ слугѣ, we love the faithful servants.

5. The apocopated termination of the adjectives is often used instead of the full in poetry, for the sake of the rhythm; e. g. *пушійсты* інен (instead of *пушійстые*), *thick hoarfrost*; *бѣстры* воды (instead of *бѣстрыя*), *rapid waters*; *добрѹ* молодѹ (instead of *добрѹму*), *to the good young man*; *сырѹ* зѣмлю (instead of *сырѹю*), *the moist earth*.

6. The inflection *іе, ія, іяго*, &c. of the common possessive adjectives is used in an elevated style, and *ѣе, ѣя, ѣяго*, &c. in familiar language.

7. As the *vocative* of the adjectives is always the same as the nominative, it has been omitted in the table of the declensions.

Paradigms
of the de-
clensions of
adjectives.

40. — With due attention to the above remarks all the adjectives of the Russian language can be declined according to the 17 paradigms. (See p. 76sq.)

First
declension.

According to the 1st paradigm (но́вый) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *ый*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *овый, евый, ный, иный*; 3) all the material possessive adjectives; 4) the diminutive adjectives in *оватый* and *еватый*; remarking that the termination *ый* when accented is changed into *ой*. Such are:

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1) Дóбрый, good, <i>н. дóброе, ф. дóбрая.</i> | Дорóжный, of road, дорóжное, дорóжная. |
| Сѣ́льный, vigorous, сѣ́льное, сѣ́льная. | Носовóй, of the nose, носовóе, носовáя. |
| Стáрый, old, стáрое, стáрая. | 3) Золотóй, of gold, золотóе, золотáя. |
| Чѣ́рный, black, чѣ́рное, чѣ́рная. | Желѣ́зный, of iron, желѣ́зное, желѣ́зная. |
| Крáсный, red, крáсное, крáсная. | Мáслый, of oil, мáсляное, мáсляная. |
| Бѣ́лый, white, бѣ́лое, бѣ́лая. | Кóжый, of leather, кóжаное, кóжаная. |
| У́мный, wise, у́мное, у́мная. | Деревáнный, of wood, деревáнное, деревáнная. |
| Грú́бый, coarse, грú́бое, грú́бая. | 4) Бѣловáтый, whitish, бѣловáтое, бѣлáя. |
| Пóлный, full, пóльное, пóльная. | Красновáтый, reddish, красно-вáтое, -тая. |
| Нѣ́жный, tender, нѣ́жное, нѣ́жная. | Синевáтый, bluish, синевáтое, синевáтая. |
| Слѣ́пый, blind, слѣ́пое, слѣ́пáя. | Рыжевáтый, ruddy, рыжевáтое, -вáтая. |
| Простóй, simple, простóе, простáя. | |
| Худóй, bad, худóе, худáя. | |
| Нѣ́мой, dumb, нѣ́мое, нѣ́мáя. | |
| 2) Бóбрый, of beaver, <i>н. бóбрóвое, ф. -бóвая.</i> | |
| Ежéвый, of hedgehog, ежéвое, ежéвая. | |
| Пчелíнный, of bee, пчелíнное, пчелíнная. | |

According to the 2nd paradigm (мягкій) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *ий*, *кій*, *хій*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *скій* and *цкій*; 3) the diminutive adjectives in *енькій* and *онькій*; the termination *ий* when accented being also changed into *ой*. Such are:

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1) Лёгкій, light, <i>н. лёгкое, ф. лёгкая.</i> | Господскій, seigneurial, <i>н. господское, ф. господская.</i> |
| Строгий, strict, строгое, строгая. | Русскій, Russian, русское, русская. |
| Кроткій, kind, кроткое, кроткая. | Нѣмецкій, German, нѣмецкое, нѣмецкая. |
| Великій, great, великое, великая. | Людскій, men's, людское, людская. |
| Упругій, elastic, упругое, упругая. | Городскій, of a town, городское, городская. |
| Горькій, bitter, горькое, горькая. | |
| Вѣтхій, old, вѣтхое, вѣтхая. | |
| Дорогой, dear, дорогое, дорогая. | 3) Маленькій, little, маленькое, -кая. |
| Сухой, dry, сухое, сухая. | Бѣленькій, whitish, бѣленькое, бѣленькая. |
| Глухой, deaf, глухое, глухая. | Лѣгонькій, lightish, лѣгонькое, -кая. |
| 2) Звѣрскій, bestial, звѣрское, -ская. | |
| Жѣнскій, feminine, жѣнское, жѣнская. | |

According to the 3rd paradigm (сѣній) are declined the adjectives: 1) qualifying, 2) circumstantial possessive, and 3) some common possessive, in *ній* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*); such are:

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1) Древній, ancient, <i>н. древнее, ф. древняя.</i> | Здѣшній, of here, <i>н. здѣшнее, ф. здѣшняя.</i> |
| Ближній, neighbour, ближнее, дальній, distant, дальнее, дальняя. | Нынѣшній, actual, нынѣшнее, -нѣшняя. |
| Искренній, sincere, искреннее, искренняя. | Зимній, hybernal, зимнее, зимняя. |
| Игрёный, light-sorrel, игрёнее, игрёная. | Весёный, vernal, весёнее, -няя. |
| Порёжный, empty, порёжнее, порёжная. | Лѣтній, estival, лѣтнее, лѣтняя. |
| Поздній, tardy, позднее, поздняя. | Осенній, autumnal, осеннее, осенняя. |
| Ранній, early, раннее, ранняя. | Прёжный, precedent, прёжнее, -жняя. |
| 2) Вчерашній, yesterday's, вчерашнее, -шняя. | Послѣдній, last, послѣднее, -дняя. |
| Вечерній, evening's, вечернее, вечерняя. | 3) Мужній, marital, мужнее, мужняя. |
| Утренній, morning's, утреннее, утренняя. | Дружній, friend's, дружнее, дружная. |
| | Сынóвній, filial, сынóвное, сынóбная. |

According to the 4th paradigm (свѣжій) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *ий*, *чій*, *шій* and *щій* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*); 2) all the comparatives and superlatives in the full termination; observing that the ending *ий* when accented is changed into *ой*. Such are:

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1) Дю́жий, robust, <i>н.</i> дю́жее, <i>ф.</i> дю́жая. | Чужо́й, foreign, <i>н.</i> чужбе, <i>ф.</i> чужа́я |
| Горя́чий, hot, горя́чее, горя́чая. | О́бщій, common, о́бщее, о́бщая. |
| Кипя́чий, boiling, кипя́чее, -чая. | Ни́щій, poor, ни́щее, ни́щая. |
| Хоро́ший, good, хоро́шее, хоро́шая. | 2) Большо́й, greater, большо́е, большо́- |
| Большо́й, great, большо́е, большо́я. | шая. |
| Похо́жий, resembling, похо́жее, -жая. | Лу́чший, better, лу́чшее, лу́чшая. |
| Приго́жий, pretty, приго́жее, приго́жая. | Ме́нший, least, ме́ньшее, ме́ньшая. |
| | Не́жнѣйшій, more tender, -ѣйшее, -шая. |

According to the 5th paradigm (Толсто́й) are declined family names in *ый* and *ий*, or in *ой* with the accent (fem. *ая*); the vowel *ы* being changed into *и* after a guttural. Such are:

- | | |
|---|---|
| Смирно́й, Smirnói, <i>ф.</i> Смирна́я. | Трубецко́й, Troobetzkói, <i>ф.</i> Трубецка́я. |
| Полево́й, Polaivói, Полева́я. | Завадо́вскій, Zavadovski, Завадо́вская. |
| Наре́жный, Naraizhni, Наре́жная. | Жуко́вскій, Zhookovski, Жуко́вская. |
| Брани́цкий, Branitzki, Брани́цкая. | Меще́рскій, Mestcherski, Меще́рская. |
| Бобринскі́й, Bobrinski, Вобри́нская. | |
| Долгору́кий, Dolgorooki, Долгору́кая. | |

Such family names as are formed from the genitive, as: Мертва́го, *Mertvaho*; Парена́го, *Parenaho*; Сухи́хъ, *Sookhikh*, Наги́хъ, *Naghikh*, are indeclinable.

According to the 6th, 7th and 8th paradigm (портной, жарко́е, кладова́я) are declined some masculine neuter and feminine nouns, which are in fact only adjectives used as substantives, remembering to change *о* into *е* and *ы* into *и* after a guttural or a hissing consonant. Such are:

- | | |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1) Вы́борный, a deputy. | 2) Живо́тное, an animal. |
| Вѣстово́й, a messenger. | Моро́женое, ice-creams. |
| Кормчи́й, the pilot. | Насе́комое, an insect. |
| Часово́й, a sentry. | 3) Вселе́нная, the universe. |
| Мастерово́й, an artisan. | Гости́ная, a drawing-room. |
| Подья́чий, a clerk. | Набере́жная, a quay. |
| Прохо́жий, a passenger. | Чертё́жная, room for the drawers. |
| Пѣвчи́й, a chanter. | Передняя́, an antechamber. |

Second declension.

According to the 9th paradigm (царе́въ) are declined the individual possessive adjectives in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ*, *ынъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*). Such are:

- | | |
|---|--|
| Сыно́въ, son's, <i>н.</i> сыно́во, <i>ф.</i> сыно́ва. | Христо́въ, Christ's, <i>н.</i> Христо́во, <i>ф.</i> Христо́ва. |
| Петро́въ, Peter's, Петро́во, Петро́ва. | |
| Отце́въ, father's, отце́во, отце́ва. | Ма́теринъ, mother's, ма́терино, -рина. |
| Геро́евъ, hero's, геро́ево, геро́ева. | До́черинъ, daughter's, до́черино, до́черина. |
| Па́вловъ, Paul's, Па́влово, Па́влова. | |

Никѣтинъ, Nicetas's, *n.* Никѣтино, *f.* Царѣцынъ, the queen's, *n.* царѣцyno,
 Никѣтина. *f.* -цына. [-цына.
 Ильинъ, Elias's, Ильино, Ильина. Дѣвицынъ, the girl's, дѣвицyno,

The adjective **Христовъ** takes in the prepositional singular the inflection **ѣ** (instead of **омѣ**) in the phrase: по Рождествѣ **Христовѣ** (instead of **Христовомѣ**), after the *Birth of Christ*.

According to the 10th paradigm (бѣлъ), are declined the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination in **ѣ** (neut. *o*, fem. *a*), with the exception of those in **мѣ**, **чѣ**, **шѣ** and **щѣ**, which belong to the 16th paradigm, remembering to change **ѣ** into **и** after the gutturals (**з**, **к**, **х**), and remarking that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in all the inflections of the full termination, is often transferred, in the apocopated, to the last syllable, sometimes in the feminine only, and at other times also in the neuter and plural. Such are:

Радъ, joyous, <i>n.</i> радо, <i>f.</i> рада; <i>pl.</i> радѣ.	Высокъ, high, <i>n.</i> высоко, <i>f.</i> высока; <i>pl.</i> высокѣ.
Гораздъ, expert, -до, -да; горазды.	Силѣнъ, vigorous, сѣльно, спѣлна; сѣльны.
Новъ, new, ново, нова; новы.	Умѣнъ, wise, умно, умна; умны.
Слабъ, weak, слабо, слаба; слабы.	Тѣпелъ, hot, тепло, тепла; теплы.
Цѣлъ, entire, цѣло, цѣла; цѣлы.	Легокъ, light, легко, легка; легки.
Великъ, great, велико, велика; велики.	Добръ, good, добро, добра; добры.
Сухъ, dry, сухо, суха; сухи.	Жѣлтъ, jellow, желто, желта; желты.
Крѣпокъ, strong, крѣпко, крѣпка; крѣпки.	Боленъ, sick, больно, больна; больны.

According to the 11th paradigm (Репнинъ) are declined family names in **овѣ**, **евѣ**, **инѣ** and **ынѣ** (fem. *a*), which take in the *prepositional* singular masculine the inflexion **ѣ** (instead of **омѣ**). Such are:

Суворовъ, Suovorof, <i>f.</i> Суворова.	Дмитріевъ, Dmitrief, <i>f.</i> Дмитріева.
Кутузовъ, Kootosof, Кутузова.	Гурьевъ, Goorief, Гурьева.
Ломоносовъ, Lomonossof, Ломоносова.	Васильевъ, Vassilief, Васильева.
Строгановъ, Stroganof, Строганова.	Державинъ, Derzhavin, Державина.
Крыловъ, Krylof, Крылова.	Карамзинъ, Karamzin, Карамзина.
Шипковъ, Shishkof, Шипкова.	Княжнинъ, Kniazhnin, Княжнина.
Херасковъ, Kheraskof, Хераскова.	Пушкинъ, Pooshkin, Пушкина.
Орловъ, Orlof, Орлова.	Потёмкинъ, Potiomkin, Потёмкина.
	Голицынъ, Golitzin, Голицына.

Foreign family names, such as: Базедовъ, *Basedow*; Канкринъ, *Cancrin*, are declined like the substantives, and, having no feminine, are indeclinable when referring to females. The same

remark applies equally to Russian family names ending in *вичъ*; but sometimes in feminine they take the termination *вичева*, which then is declined as an adjective; e. g. у Графини *Канкринъ*, at the Countess *Cancrin*; у Госпожи *Максимовичъ* or *Максимовичевой*, at Madame *Maximovitch*.

According to the 12th, 13th and 14th paradigms (*Кáшинъ*, *Бородинó*, *Мýрина*) are declined such names of towns, boroughs and villages, as end in the masculine in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ*, *ынъ*; in the neuter in *ово*, *ево*, *ино*, *ыно*, and in the feminine in *ова*, *ева*, *ина*, *ына*, which take also in the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter the inflection *ѣ* (instead of *омъ*). Such are:

- | | | |
|----------------------|-----------------------|-----------------------|
| 1) (<i>городъ</i>) | Борисовъ, Borissof. | Царѣцyno, Tzaritzino. |
| | Могилѣвъ, Mohilef. | Останкино, Ostankino. |
| | Алѣксинъ, Alexin. | 3) (<i>деревня</i>) |
| | Козловъ, Kozlof. | Парголова, Pargolova. |
| 2) (<i>селó</i>) | Тарутино, Tarootino. | Краскова, Kraskova. |
| | Измайлово, Izmailovo. | Леташѣва, Letachova. |
| | | Валутина, Valootina. |

Exceptions to this rule are the names of the following towns: *Кіевъ*, *Kief*; *Псковъ*, *Pleskow*; *Харьковъ*, *Charkof*; *Гдовъ*, *Gdof*; *Ростовъ*, *Rostof*; *Орловъ*, *Orlof*; as also the names of foreign towns, e. g. *Берлинъ*, *Berlin*, which are declined like substantives, having in the *instrumental* singular the inflection *омъ* (and not *ымъ*). The same is the case with the names of towns in *скъ*, *цкъ* and *ь*; as: *Смоленскъ*, *Smolensk*; *Полоцкъ*, *Polotsk*; *Ярославъ*, *Yaroslavl*, &c.

In such names of towns as are formed of *новъ* and *бѣло*, as: *Новгородъ*, *Nougorod*; *Бѣлоозеро*, *Bieloozero*, both the adjective and substantive are declined: *G.* *Новогóрода*, *Бѣлобóзера*; *D.* *Новугóроду*, *Бѣлубóзеру*; *I.* *Новымъ-гóродомъ*, *Бѣлымъ-бóзеромъ*; *P.* *о Новѣгóродѣ*, *Бѣлѣбóзерѣ* (taking also the inflection *ѣ* instead of *омъ*).

According to the 15th paradigm (*Госпóдень*) is declined the individual possessive adjective:

Бóжій, of God, *n.* Бóжіе, *f.* Бóжіа; *pl.* Бóжіи, which must not be confounded with the common possessive adjective бóжескій, *divine, relating to the attributes of God*. The adjective Бóжій takes also the inflections of mixed termination, as in Бóжье дѣрево, *southern wood* (a plant); Бóжья корóвка, *cochineal, the lady-bird*; *G.* Бóжьяго дѣрева, Бóжьей корóвки, *D.* Бóжьему дѣреву, &c.

According to the 16th paradigm (синь) are declined the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination ending in *o* or *z* (neut. *e*, fem. *я*), and also those in *жсѣ*, *чѣ*, *шѣ*, *щѣ* (neut. *e*, fem. *а*), remembering to change *я* into *а* and *ю* into *у* after the hissings (ж, ч, ш, щ). Such are:

Дре́вень, ancient, *n.* дре́вне, *f.* дре́вня. Све́жъ, fresh, *n.* све́жѣ, *f.* све́жа.
Искре́ненъ, sincere, искренне, -ення. Ры́жъ, caroty, ры́же, ры́жа.
Поро́женъ, empty, поро́жне, поро́жня. Гора́чъ, burning, горячо́, горяча́.
Дю́жъ, robust, дю́же, дю́жа. Хоро́шъ, good, хорошо́, хороша́.
Похóжъ, semblable, похóже, похóжа. Тощъ, fasting, то́ще, тоща́.

According to the 17th paradigm (ры́бий) are declined the common possessive adjectives in *ий*, *овий*, *евий* (neut. *о*, fem. *ья*), which are formed from the specific names of animals; e. g. Third declension.

Оле́ний, of deer, <i>n.</i> оле́нье, <i>f.</i> оле́нья.	Пти́чий, of bird, <i>n.</i> пти́чье, <i>f.</i> пти́чья.
Собо́лий, of sable, собо́лье, собо́лья.	Пѣту́ший, of cock, пѣту́шье, пѣту́шья.
Коз́ий, of goat, коз́ье, коз́ья.	Верблю́жий, of camel, верблю́жье,
Коро́вий, of cow, коро́вье, коро́вья.	-жьа.
Ове́чий, of sheep, ове́чье, ове́чья.	Лебя́жий, of swan, лебя́жье, лебя́жья.
Медве́жий, of bear, медве́жье,	Воло́вий, of ox, воло́вье, воло́вья.
медве́жья.	Конё́вий, of horse, конё́вье, конё́вья.
Бара́ний, of ram, бара́нье, бара́нья.	Му́шій, of fly, му́шье, му́шья.
Гова́жий, of ox, гова́жье, гова́жья.	Теля́чий, of calf, теля́чье, теля́чья.
Слоно́вий, of elephant, слоно́вье, -вья.	Клопо́вий, of bug, клопо́вье, клопо́вья.
Сомо́вий, of silurus, сомо́вье, сомо́вья.	Во́лчий, of wolf, во́лчье, во́лчья.
Лис́ий, of fox, лис́ье, лис́ья.	Челове́чий, of man, челове́чье, -в́чья.

The possessive adjective *челове́чий* is used when applied to man as an animal, and the adjective *челове́ческий* (*n.* *о*, *f.* *а*) to man as an intelligent being.

EXERCISES ON THE ADJECTIVES.

It is necessary to observe preliminarily that according to the rules of construction in the Russian language the adjective is usually placed before the substantive, when it does not form the attribute of the proposition; and that the verb *to be* is commonly understood in the present.

An empty pocket; the pocket is empty. A strong castle; Апосcope of the termination.
Пусто́й карма́нъ; (есть) . Кре́пкій за́мокъ;
the castle is strong. A faithful servant; the servant has been
Вѣ́рный слуга́; бы́лъ

faithful. The soft wax; the wax is soft. A quiet sleep; the
 . Мягкій воскъ; . Спокойный сонъ;

sleep is quiet. A worthy son; the son is worthy. A true
 . Достойный сынъ; . Истинный

friend; the friend is true. Perfect repose; the repose
 другъ; . Совершенный покой;

will be perfect. A transparent glass; the glass is transparent.
 будетъ . Прозрачный стекло; .

An ancient tradition; the tradition was ancient. A hot summer;
 Древний преданіе; было . Тёплый лѣто;

the summer will be hot. A blunt pen; the pen is blunt.
 будетъ . Тупой перо; .

An old hut; the hut is old. A blue paper; the paper is
 Вѣтхій хижина; . Синій бумага;

blue. New houses; the houses are new. Rich families;
 . Новый домъ; (суть) . Богатый семья;

the families were rich. Red ensigns; the ensigns will be red.
 были . Красный знамя; будутъ .

Degrees of White paper; whiter paper; the whitest paper. The Neva
 signification. Бѣлый бумага; . Невá

is rapid, and the Volga is more rapid. The milk is
 (есть) быстрый, а Вólга . Молоко

liquid, and the water is more liquid. A deep brook; a deeper
 жидкій, а вода . Глубокій ручей;

river. The houses are high, and the towers are higher.
 рѣка. Домъ (суть) высокій, а башня .

Good tea; better tea; the best tea. The dogs are little;
 Хорошій чай; . Собака малый;

the cats are less; but the mice are the least. The father is
 кошка ; но мышь . Отець

young; the mother is younger; but the sister is the youngest.
 молодой; мать ; но сестра .

The hay is dear, and the straw is dearer. Milk is sweet;
Сѣно дорогѣй, а солома . Молоко сладкій;

sugar is sweeter; but honey is the sweetest of all.
сахаръ ; но мѣдъ .

Some whitish paper; some reddish ink; some blackish
Бѣлый бумага; бѣлый чернила *pl*; чѣрный

water; the colour is bluish. A little red cow; a little pony;
вода; краска (*есть*) синій. Бѣлый коровка; малый лоша́дка;

a little piebald horse; a poor little girl; the grey-headed
пѣгій лоша́дка; бѣдный дѣвочка; старичёкъ

man is very old; the little old woman is very good. Very white
(*есть*) ста́рый; стару́шка до́брый. Бѣлый

paper; the paper is very white; very dry wood; the wood
бума́га; ; сухой́ дрова́ *pl*;

is very dry.

The master of the large gardens, and the mistress of the new Declension of the full termination.
Хозя́инъ обши́рный садъ, и хозяйка но́вый

house. A glass of good water and of red wine; whole
домъ. Стака́нь хоро́ший вода́ и краси́вый вино́; цѣ́лый

pots of pork-fat and of fir-resin. Do good
горшо́къ свиной́ са́ло и ело́вый смо́ла. Дѣла́й (*acc.*) добро́

to poor children and to infirm old men, and do not go
бѣдный дитя́ и дря́хлый ста́рикъ, и не ходи́

into the fields of others. This is the house of the Prince
по (*dat.*) по́ле чужо́й. Вотъ (*nom.*) домъ Кня́зь

Dolgoruki, that is the palace of the Countess Tolstoi, and
Долгору́кий, вотъ дворе́ць Графи́ня Толсто́й, а

there are the large gardens of the young Counts Zavadovski.
вотъ обши́рный садъ молодо́й Графъ Завадо́вский.

I have admired the agreeable song of the nightingale of last year.
Я диви́лся (*dat.*) прі́ятный пѣ́ніе соловей́ прошлoгóдний.

To cut a swan's quill with a blunt penknife. There are
 Чинить (*acc.*) лебединый перо тупой ножи́къ. Вотъ (*nom.*)
 some goose quills, some red crayons, some thick blank books,
 гуси́ный перо, краси́ый карандашъ, то́стый тетрадь *f*,
 some oak-rulers, and great mathematical compasses, and here
 дубо́вый линѣйка, и большо́й ци́ркуль *m*, а вотъ
 are some woollen clothes, some silk stockings, some beaver hats,
 суконный кафта́нъ, шелко́вый чуло́къ, пухо́вый шля́па,
 fine linen, and still finer lace. Love good
 то́нкий полотно́ и тонча́йший кру́жево. Люби́ (*acc.*) непоро́чный
 morals; read useful books; honour old people;
 нравъ; чита́й (*acc.*) по́лезный кни́га; чита́ (*acc.*) ста́рый лю́ди *pl*;
 praise good actions; keep the honest and faithful
 хвали́ (*acc.*) до́брый дѣ́ло; береги́ (*acc.*) че́стный и ве́рный
 servant. Give the new book to the most attentive
 слуга́. Подари́ (*acc.*) но́вый кни́га (*dat.*) са́мый приле́жный
 scholar. You praise the weather of spring, the splendour
 учени́къ. Ты хвали́шь (*acc.*) пого́да весе́нный, я́сность *f*
 of the summer nights, the coolness of autumn, and the colds
 ле́тний nochъ *f*, прохла́да о́сенний и хо́лодь
 of winter. I esteem the celebrated men, and the illustrious
 зими́й. Я уважа́ю (*acc.*) сла́вный мужъ и знаменитый
 commanders of ancient times. The great military manœuvres of
 полководо́ецъ дре́вний вре́мя. Большо́й манёвръ въ (*prep.*)
 this year will take place at Kransnoe Selo, and on the
 ны́нѣшний годъ бу́дутъ въ (*prep.*) Краси́ое Село́ и на (*prep.*)
 mountain of Douderhof.
 Гора́ Ду́дергофскі́й.

Declension
 of the apo-
 corated ter-
 mination.

He has left the house of his father, and he does
 Онъ вы́ехалъ изъ (*gen.*) домо́ отце́въ, и дѣ́лаетъ (*acc.*)
 good to the daughter of his sister. He has sold the property
 добро́ (*dat.*) дочь *f* се́стринъ. Онъ про́далъ (*acc.*) имѣ́ние

of his wife to the son of his brother. To visit the temples of
 женинъ (*dat.*) сынъ братнинъ. Посъщать (*acc.*) храмъ

the Lord and the churches of God. To resign one's self to
 Господень и цѣрковь Божій. Повиноваться (*dat.*)

the will of the Lord, and to acknowledge the majesty of the
 боля Господень, и познавать (*acc.*) величество

name of God. The first Russian Grammar was written by
 имя Божій. Пѣрвый Рѣсскій Грамматика была написана (*instr.*)

the immortal Lomonossof, and the History of Russia by
 безсмѣртный Ломоносовъ, и Исторія Россійскій (*instr.*)

Nicholas Mikhaïlovitch Karamzin. The battles against the
 Николай Михайловичъ Карамзинъ. Сраженіе съ (*instr.*)

French were fought near Borodino and Borissouf.
 Французъ происходили подъ (*instr.*) Бородино и подъ Борисовъ.

I have lived at Novgorod and at Bieloozero. The villages
 Я живалъ въ (*prep.*) Новгородъ и въ Белоозеро. Деревня

of the Princess Saltykof are situated near the town of Kashin.

Княгиня Салтыковъ лежатъ подъ (*instr.*) городъ Кашинъ.

There is a cloak of fox-skin, a sable- cap, a bird- nest, Declension
 Вотъ (*nom.*) шуба лисій, соболій шапка, птицій гнѣздо, of the mixed
 termination

some hare- skins, and some elephant's teeth. A rood of deer-
 заячій мехъ и слоновій зубъ. Пудъ олений

flesh, a yard of ox- skin, and a pound of calf's brains. Do
 мясо, аршинъ воловій кожа, и фунтъ телячій мозгъ. Не

not go on the track of a wolf, and do not enter into the den
 ходи по (*dat.*) слѣдъ волчій, и не входи въ (*acc.*) берлогу

of the bear. A dissertation on the man's eye, and on the
 медвѣжій. Разсужденіе о (*prep.*) человѣчій глазъ, и о

fish- head. He deals in isinglass, in ox- fat,
 рыбій голова. Онъ торгуетъ (*instr.*) рыбій клей, бычачій сало,

in goats' skins, and in cocks' combs.

козій шкура, и пѣтушій грѣбень *m.*

Declension of various adjectives. The braggart is like the jay, adorned with
Хвасту́нь (*есть*) похо́жий на (*acc.*) со́бя, укра́шенный (*instr.*)

peacocks' feathers. The brother of the neighbour has arrived from
павли́ний перо́. Братъ сосѣдовъ приѣхалъ изъ (*gen.*)

a distant town, and the sister from a more distant village.
да́льний городъ, а сестра́ изъ да́льний деревня.

John's coat is small, but that of Peter is still
Ива́новъ пла́тье (*есть*) у́зкій, но (*пла́тье*) Петро́въ (*есть*) ещё

smaller. The good little old woman lives in a damp
у́зкій. До́брый стару́шка живѣтъ въ (*prep.*) сыро́й

house, situated near the village Tzaritzino. I have bought a
домъ, лежа́щій подъ (*instr.*) село́ Цари́цыно. Я купи́лъ (*acc.*)

cloak of bear-skin with a collar of beaver-skin and a
шу́ба медвѣ́жій съ (*instr.*) воротни́къ бобра́вый, и

cap of beaver-skin with a silk-ribbon. There is a handsome
ша́пка бобра́вый съ ше́лковыи́ лѣнта. Вотъ (*nom.*) прекра́сный

book with a rich binding of morocco. Where shall we
кни́га въ (*prep.*) бога́тый переплѣтъ сафа́нный. Гдѣ мы

find an instance of purer self-denial, of more exalted
найде́мъ примѣръ чи́стый самоотверже́ние, вы́сокій

love for the native land?

любо́вь *f* къ (*dat.*) оте́чество?

THE NUMERALS.

Division of numerals.

41. — The *numerals* (числи́тельные имена́) are of two kinds: 1) the *cardinal* numerals (ко́личественны́я), which express the number; and 2) the *ordinal* numerals (поря́дочны́я), which indicate order or rank, and are formed (with exception of *пе́рвый*) from the cardinals, as is seen below.

CARDINAL NUMERALS.

ORDINAL NUMERALS.

1. одинъ, <i>н. одно, ф. одна</i> (<i>sl. еди́нъ, ѱно, ѱна</i>)	пёрвыйй, <i>н. пёрвое, ф. пёрвая</i> , first.
2. два, <i>ф. двѣ</i>	второйй, <i>бе, ая</i> , second.
3. три	трётійй, <i>тье, тья</i> , third.
4. четы́ре	четвёртыйй, <i>ое, ая</i> , fourth.
5. пять	пѣтыйй, <i>ое, ая</i> , fifth.
6. шесть	шестойй, <i>бе, ая</i> , sixth.
7. семь (<i>sl. седьмъ</i>)	седьмойй, <i>бе, ая</i> , seventh.
8. во́семь (<i>sl. осьмъ</i>)	осьмойй, <i>бе, ая</i> , eighth.
9. де́вять	девя́тыйй, <i>ое, ая</i> , ninth.
10. де́сять	деся́тыйй, <i>ое, ая</i> , tenth.
11. оди́ннадцать	оди́ннадцатыйй <i>or</i> пёрвыйй на- десять 11th.
12. двѣ́надцать (<i>sl. двана́дцать</i>)	двѣ́ннадцатыйй <i>or</i> второйй на- десять, 12th.
13. три́надцать	три́ннадцатыйй <i>or</i> трётійй на- десять, 13th.
14. четы́рнадцать	четы́рнадцатыйй <i>or</i> четвёртыйй на-десять, 14th.
15. пѣ́надцать	пѣ́ннадцатыйй <i>or</i> пѣтыйй на-де- сять, 15th.
16. шестна́дцать	шестна́дцатыйй <i>or</i> шестойй на- десять, 16th.
17. семна́дцать	семна́дцатыйй <i>or</i> седьмойй на- десять, 17th.
18. осьмна́дцать <i>or</i> восемна́д- цать	осьмна́дцатыйй <i>or</i> осьмойй на- десять, 18th.
19. девѣ́тнадцать	девѣ́тнадцатыйй <i>or</i> девѣтыйй на- десять, 19th.
20. двѣ́дцать (<i>sl. двѣ́дцать</i>)	двѣ́дцатыйй (<i>sl. двѣ́дцѣтыйй</i>), <i>ое, ая</i> , 20th.
21. двѣ́дцать одинъ	двѣ́дцать пёрвыйй, 21st.
22. двѣ́дцать два	двѣ́дцать второйй, 22d.
30. три́дцать	три́дцатыйй, <i>ое, ая</i> , 30th.
40. со́рокъ (<i>sl. четы́редцѣть</i>).	сороко́войй (<i>sl. четы́редцѣтыйй</i>), <i>бе, ая</i> , 40th.
50. пѣ́дцѣть	пѣ́дцѣтыйй, <i>ое, ая</i> , 50th.

60. шестьдесят	шестидесятый, ое, ая, 60th.
70. сѣмьдесятъ	семидесятый, ое, ая, 70th.
80. вѣсьмьдесятъ	осьмидесятый, ое, ая, 80th.
90. девѣносто (<i>sl. дѣвѣтъ- десятъ</i>)	девѣностый (<i>sl. девѣтидеся- тый</i>) 90th.
100. сто	сѣтый, ое, ая, hundredth.
200. двѣсти	двухъ-сѣтый, ое, ая, 200th.
300. трѣста	трѣхъ-сѣтый, ое, ая, 300th.
400. четырѣста	четырѣхъ-сѣтый, ое, ая, 400th.
500. пятьсѣтъ	пятисѣтый, ое, ая, 500th.
600. шестьсѣтъ	шестисѣтый, ое, ая, 600th.
700. семьсѣтъ	семисѣтый, ое, ая, 700th.
800. вѣсьмьсѣтъ	осьмисѣтый, ое, ая, 800th.
900. девѣтсѣтъ	девѣтисѣтый, ое, ая, 900th.
1000. ты́сяча (<i>sl. тысяща</i>)	ты́сячный, ое, ая, thousandth.
2000. двѣ ты́сячи	двухъ-ты́сячный, ое, ая, two thousandth.
10,000. дѣ́сять ты́сячь (<i>sl. тма</i>).	десятиты́сячный, ое, ая, ten thousandth.
100,000. сто ты́сячь	стоты́сячный, ое, ая, 100- thousandth.
1,000,000. милли́онъ	милли́онный, ое, ая, millionth.
2,000,000. два милли́она	двухъ-милли́онный, ое, ая, two millionth.
1,000,000,000. ты́сяча мил- ли́оновъ	ты́сячемилли́онный, ое, ая, 1000- millionth.
1,000,000,000,000. билли́онъ	билли́онный, ое, ая, billionth.

To the cardinal numerals belong the *fractional* (дрѣбныя) numerals, such as: половѣна, *the half*; трѣть, *the third*; четвѣрть, *the fourth*; осьмѣха, *the eighth*; полторѣ, *one and a half*; полтрѣтьѣ, *two and a half*; полчетвѣртѣ, *three and a half*, &c.; and to the ordinal numerals belong also the circumstantial adjectives другѣй, *other*, and послѣднѣй, *last*: другѣй being used instead of вторѣй, *second*, and послѣднѣй being opposed to пѣрвѣй, *first*.

From the cardinal numerals *два, три, &c.* as far as *десять*, as also from *сто*, are formed the *collective* (собира́тельные) numerals: *двое, трое, четверо, пятеро, &c., десятеро, сотеро*. The following words also belong to the collective numerals: *оба* (*f. оба*), *both*; *двойка, two*; *тройка, three*; *пятóк, five*; *десяток, ten*; *дюжина, a dozen*; *сóтня, a hundred*.

The numerals *одинъ* and *первый* are also used as qualifying adjectives, and in that case take some inflections peculiar to adjectives. *Одинъ* takes the augmentative termination *одинёхонекъ* and *одинёшенекъ*; and *первый* takes the diminutive termination *первенький*, as also the inflection of the superlative *первѣйшій* or *самый первый*.

42. — As regards declension, the numerals may be considered as substantive and adjective. The *substantive* numerals are: *сорокъ, сто, девяносто, тысяча, миллионъ, половина, треть f., пятóк, десятокъ, дюжина, &c.* The gender of these, as also their declension, is indicated by their termination. All the ordinal numbers, and the cardinal *одинъ*, are numerals adjective. All the other numerals are sometimes adjective, requiring the same case as the nouns to which they are joined, and sometimes substantive, in which occasion they require the noun to which they belong to be put in the genitive case, as will be seen later. Some of the last mentioned have the inflections of nouns, while others have inflections peculiar to themselves. A general view of the declension of the numerals may be obtained from the following table.

Declension
of the
numerals.

PARADIGMS OF THE DECLENSION OF THE NUMERALS.

PARAD.	Nom. or Accus.	Gen. or Acc.	Dative.	Instrum.	Propos.
1.	<i>м. одинъ, н. одно, ф. одна, one.</i>	(See its declension in the <i>Pronouns</i> parad. 15).			
2.	<i>м. н. два, ф. двѣ, two.</i>	двухъ	двумъ	двумъ	двухъ.
3.	<i>м. н. оба, both.</i>	обоихъ	обоимъ	обоимъ	обоихъ.
	<i>фем. оба.</i>	обѣихъ	обѣимъ	обѣимъ	обѣихъ.
4.	три, three	трѣхъ	трёмъ	трёмъ	трѣхъ.
5.	четыре, four	четырёхъ	четырёхъ	четырьмъ	четырёхъ.
6.	два и двѣ, two	двоихъ	двоимъ	двоимъ	двоихъ.
7.	четыре и двѣ, four	четырёхъ	четырёхъ	четырьмъ	четырёхъ.
8.	пять, five	пяти	пяти	пятию	пяти.
9.	восемь, eight	осьми	осьми	восемью	осьми.
10.	пятнадцать, fifty	пятнадцати	пятнадцати	пятнадцатью	пятнадцати.
11.	двѣсти, two hundred	двухъ сотъ	двумъ стамъ	двумъ стамъ	двухъ стамъ.
12.	пятьсотъ, five hundred	пяти сотъ	пяти стамъ	пяти стамъ	пяти стамъ.
13.	<i>м. н. полторѣ, one and a half.</i>	полтора	полтору	полторымъ	полторѣ.
	<i>фем. полторѣ.</i>	полторы	полторѣ	полторымъ	полторѣ.
	<i>пл. 3 с. полторы.</i>	полторымъ	полторымъ	полторымъ	полторымъ.
14.	<i>м. н. полтретьи, two and a half.</i>	полтретья	полтретью	полтретьимъ	полтретьѣ.
	<i>фем. полтретьи.</i>	полтретьи	полтретьѣ	полтретьимъ	полтретьѣ.
	<i>пл. 3 с. полтретьи.</i>	полтретьимъ	полтретьимъ	полтретьимъ	полтретьимъ.
15.	<i>сing. полдень м. midday.</i>	полднѣ	полдню	полднемъ	полднѣ.
	<i>plur. полднѣ.</i>	полднѣ	полднѣ	полднѣ	полднѣ.
16.	<i>сing. полгода, half a year.</i>	полугода	полугоду	полгодамъ	полгоду.
	<i>plur. полгода.</i>	полгода	полгода	полгодамъ	полгодамъ.

With respect to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the numerals we may remark, that it is generally placed on the inflections of the cases, as happens in all the numerals from *одинъ* to *десять*, and from *двадцать* to *восемьдесятъ*, as also in *двое*, *трое*, *четыре* and other similar words. The numerals *пять*, *шесть*, &c. as far as *десять*, as also *двадцать* and *тридцать*, while they are declined as feminine nouns in *ъ*, differ from them in the accent, which is placed on the last vowel in all the cases: *пяти*, *пятью*, *десяти*, &c., whilst in the nouns the accent is transposed only in the prepositional case: *въ связи*, *въ тѣни*, &c. The numeral *сорокъ*, which is declined like nouns in *ъ*, differs from them in the accent; for no dissyllabic noun can, without the elision of the vowel, transfer its accent from the first syllable to the inflection of the cases, as happens in *сорокъ*; *сорока*, *сороку*, &c.

According to the 6th and 7th paradigms (двое and четверо) are declined the similar collective numerals; viz:

6th par.) Трое and трои, three.	Шестеро and шестеры, six.
О'бое and обои, two.	Десятеро and десятеры, ten.
7th par.) Пятеро and пятеры, five.	Сотеро and сотеры, hundred.

Двое, трое, четверо, &c., are used with the names of animate beings of the masculine and neuter gender; and двои, трои, четверы, &c., with the names of inanimate and abstract objects which only occur in the plural; e. g. двое слугъ, *two servants*; трои часы, *three watches*. We may still observe that обое had formerly a singular, the genitive, обоего, of which is still found in the expression: жители обоего пола, *the natives of both sexes*.

According to the 8th and 10th paradigms (пять and пятьдесятъ) are declined the similar numbers following, with the exception of восемь, which is declined by the 9th paradigm; e. g.

8th par.) Шесть, six, <i>gen.</i> шестѣ.	Тридцать, thirty, <i>gen.</i> тридцатѣ.
Семь, seven, <i>семѣ.</i>	[десяти.
Девять, nine, <i>девятѣ.</i>	10th par.) Шестьдесятъ, sixty, <i>шестѣ.</i>
Десять, ten, <i>десяти.</i>	Семьдесятъ, seventy, <i>семѣ.</i>
Одиннадцать, eleven, <i>одиннадцати.</i>	десяти.
Двадцать, twenty, <i>двадцатѣ.</i>	Восемьдесятъ, eighty,
	осмьдесятѣ.

The first member *восемь* of the last word is declined according to the 9th paradigm: *gen.* осмьдесятѣ, *instr.* восемьюдесятью or осмьдесятѣю.

According to the 11th and 12th paradigms (двѣсти and пятьсотъ) are declined the following numerals; viz:

11th par.) Триста, three hundred, <i>gen.</i> трѣхъ сотъ.	Семьсотъ, 700, <i>gen.</i> семи сотъ
Четыреста, 400, <i>четырёхъ</i>	Восемьсотъ, 800, <i>осми сотъ.</i>
12th par.) Шестьсотъ, 600, <i>шести сотъ.</i>	Девятьсотъ, 900, <i>деяти сотъ.</i>

Двѣсти (instead of *дваста*) is the Slavonic dual of сто, and was used with два and оба, as we shall see later.

According to the 13th paradigm (полтора) are declined such numerals as are formed of полъ, *the half*, with the apocopated genitive of the ordinal number, with the exception of полтретья, which is declined according to the 14th paradigm: e. g.

Получетверта́, three and a half, *gen.* полу́четверта; *fem.* полчетверты́.
 Полпя́та, four and a half, . . . полу́пята; . . . полпяты́.
 Полшестá, five and a half, . . . полу́шеста; . . . полшесты́.
 Полдесята́, nine and a half, . . . полу́десята; . . . полдесяты́.

The compound numeral *полтора́ста*, a *hundred and fifty* (a *hundred and a half*) forms *полутора́ста* in all the oblique cases. All these words, however, with the exception of *полтора́* and *полтора́ста*, are antiquated, and no longer used.

According to the 15th and 16th paradigms (*по́лдень* and *по́лгода*) are declined such nouns as are formed with the numeral *полъ*, *the half*; e. g.

15th p.) По́лночь, midnight, <i>gen.</i> полу́-	Полслова́, half a word, <i>gen.</i> полуслова́.
ночи.	[часá. Полминуты́, half a minute, полу-
16th p.) Полчасá, half an hour, полу-	минуты́.
По́лдня, half a day, полу́дня.	Полверсты́, half a werst, полуверсты́.
Полведра́, half a pail, полу-	Полфунта́, half a pound, полу-
ведра́.	фунта́.

We must remark that the numeral *полъ* is joined to substantives in the genitive singular, to indicate *a half*, with the exception of *по́лдень* and *по́лночь*, which signify the *middle of the day* or *of the night*, *midday* or *midnight*. All these nouns are declined by joining *полу* to the other cases of the simple substantive. We have still to add that *по́лдень* takes in the prepositional with *но* the inflection *и* (instead of *ю*); thus we say: *по полу́дни*, *after noon*. Such nouns as have *полу* in the nominative singular, as *полуо́стровъ*, a *peninsula*; *полумѣсяцъ*, a *crescent*, are declined like simple substantives.

In the compound cardinal numerals, such as: *два́дцать два*, *twenty two*; *три́дцать пять*, *thirty five*; *сто шесть*, a *hundred and six*, each number is declined separately; *G.* *двадцати́ двухъ*, *тридцати́ пяти́*, *ста шести́*, &c. But when they form ordinal numerals, such as: *два́дцать пе́рвый*, *twenty first*; *сто второ́й*, *hundred and second*, the ordinal number only is declined, and the cardinal numerals remain indeclinable; *G.* *два́дцать пе́рваго*, *сто второ́го*. The same is the case with *на́десять*, in the compound numbers; e. g. *пе́рвый-на́десять*, *eleventh*; *второ́й-на́десять*, *twelfth*, where the first part, *пе́рвый*, *второ́й*, is alone declined.

The other numerals follow the declension of the nouns or adjectives to which by their termination they belong. Thus

сорокъ, *forty*; миллионъ, *million*; десятокъ, *ten*, follow the first declensions of substantives (§ 30, *gen.* сорока́, миллио́на, де́сятка); сто, *a hundred*, and девяно́сто, *ninety*, follow the second; while дюжи́на, *a dozen*; со́тня, *a hundred*; ты́сяча, *a thousand* (*instr. sing.* ты́сячею and ты́сячью) are declined according to the third. On this subject we must observe that the numerals *сорокъ*, *сто* and *девяно́сто* only follow the declension of the substantives when they are used as nouns to express *forties*, *hundreds* and *nineties*, and then *сорокъ* and *сто* have also a plural (сороки́, сороко́въ; ста, сотъ, &c.); but when they are joined to a substantive, or to another numeral, they take in the *dative* and *instrumental* cases singular the inflection of the genitive (сорока́, ста, девяно́ста), and sometimes even in the *prepositional*, especially with another numeral.

The ordinal numerals, which are all adjectives, terminating in *ый*, or *ой* (*neut. ое*, *fem. ая*), are declined according to the full termination of the adjectives, with the exception of трети́й (*м. третье*, *ж. третья*), *third*, which is declined according to the mixed termination (§ 40).

The numerals *два*, *оба*, *три*, *четыре*, *двое*, *трое*, *четыре*, have the accusative like the nominative, when they are with the names of inanimate and abstract objects, and like the genitive, when with the names of animate beings. But all the rest: *пять*, *шесть*, *семь*, *два́дцать*, &c. have always the accusative like the nominative; the same is the case with the numbers *два*, *три*, *четыре*, when joined to tens, hundreds or thousands; as *два́дцать два*, *twenty two*; *сто три*, *a hundred and three*, &c., even when referring to animate objects; e. g. *собрать два́дцать два во́нна* (and not *два́дцать двухъ во́нновъ*), *to unite twenty two warriors*.

43. — The cardinal numerals, in Russian, when joined with substantives follow various rules unlike those of any other language. These rules are as follows:

Special rules
of the
numerals.

1. *Оди́нъ* agrees with its substantive in gender, number and case, and in the compound numerals, such as, *два́дцать оди́нъ*, *сто оди́нъ*, the substantive is always put in the singular.

2. The numerals *два, оба, три, четыре* (and their compounds as *двадцать два, сто четыре, &c.*), *полтора, полтретья*, and others of the same kind, when employed in the nominative or accusative, require the noun to which they belong, to be put in the *genitive singular*, observing that *два, оба, полтора, полтретья*, agree in *gender* with the noun. If there is an adjective, it takes the gender of the substantive and is put in the *nominative plural*.—With all the other numerals, from *пять*, as also with *двое, трое, четверо, пятеро, &c.*, the substantive is put in the *genitive plural*, and if there be an adjective, it agrees with the noun or with the numeral, according to the sense of the phrase. Thus we say: *первые два большие стола, the two first large tables*; and *сидят пять больших столов, these five large tables*.

This *genitive singular*, which occurs with the numerals *два, три, четыре*, is simply the Slavonic *dual*, which was used with *два* and *оба*, and which has also been retained in *двѣсти* (*sl. двѣтъсь*). The numerals *три* and *четыре* were simple adjectives, agreeing with their substantive, while *пять* and the numerals following were considered as collective nouns, always requiring the *genitive plural* after them.

A peculiarity of the Russian language must still be mentioned: it requires the adjective which accompanies the nouns formed of the numerals *полъ* (as *полчася, полгода*), as also the numerals *полтора, полтретья*, to be placed in the *nominative plural*: e. g. *первые полчася, the first half hour*. But in the other cases the adjective agrees with the substantive; e. g. *въ продолжение первого получаса, in the space of the first half hour*.

3. With the numerals in the oblique cases, the substantive is always put in the plural. *a*) When the numerals have a gender, as: *пятюкъ, дюжина, тысяча, миллионъ*, the noun is always put in the *genitive*, and the same rule applies equally to *сорокъ* and *сто*, when used in the plural. *б*) With the other numerals, such as: *два, оба, три, четыре, пять, сорокъ, девяносто, сто, &c.*, the noun agrees with the numeral in *case*. We remark further that in words compounded of two numerals the case of the substantive is determined by the later numeral. Thus we say: *съ тремястами воиновъ, with three hundred warriors*, and *со ста тремя воинами, with a hundred and three warriors*;

въ сорокъ *верстахъ*, at *forty wersts*, and сорокъ сороковъ *церквей*, one thousand six hundred churches (forty forties).

4. With the preposition *по*, indicating the distribution of an equal quantity, the numerals *два, три, четыре, две, три, четыре*, retain the inflection of the nominative, and then the noun is put in the *genitive singular*, but the other numerals are put in the dative (*сорокъ, сто* and *девятьсто* then take their regular inflection *у*), and the noun is put in the *genitive plural*. Thus we say: *по два рубля, по пяти рублёй, по сороку рублёй*, to each two, five, forty roobles.

The numerals *полтора, полтретья*, &c., take also with the preposition *по* the inflection *у* of the dative, and the noun in the *genitive singular*: in all other cases the noun and the numeral agree; e. g. *по полутора рубль*, to each a rooble and a half.

EXERCISES ON THE NUMERALS.

Man has one tongue, one nose, two eyes,
У (gen.) человекъ (есть) одинъ языкъ, одинъ носъ, два глаза,
 two ears, two cheeks, two arms, two legs, ten fingers
два уха, два щека, два рука, два ногъ, десять палецъ
 at the hands and ten toes at the feet, thirty two teeth,
на (prep.) рука и десять палецъ на ногъ, тридцать два зубъ,
 and seven vertebres. Leap year has four
и семь позвонокъ. Въ (prep.) високосный годъ (есть) четыре
 seasons, 12 months, 52 weeks and two days, or 366 days,
время, 12 мѣсяцъ, 52 недѣля и два день т, или 366 день,
 or 8784 hours, or 527,040 minutes. The book has a
или 8784 часъ, или 527,040 минутъ. Въ (prep.) книга (есть)
 hundred leaves less one. The two brothers and the two
сто листь безъ (gen.) одинъ. Оба братъ и оба
 sisters. An hour and a half, and a minute and a half. Two
сестра. Полтора часъ, и полтора минутъ. Два
 roobles and a half, and three kopecs and a half.
рубль т съ (instr.) полови́на и три копейка съ полови́на.

The berkovetz has 10 poods; the pood 40 pounds; the
 Въ (*prep.*) бёрковецъ (*есмь*) 10 пудъ; въ пудъ 40 фунтъ; въ
 pound 32 loths; the loth 3 zolotniks; the pound has 96
 фунтъ 32 лоть; въ лоть 3 золотникъ; въ фунтъ 96
 zolotniks.
 золотникъ.

Two beaver-hats, three silk-handkerchiefs, four pen-
 Два пуховый шляпа, три шёлковый платокъ, четы́ре перо-
 knives, five cups of porcelain, and six magnificent
 чинный ножикъ, пять чашка фарфóровый, и шесть прекра́сный
 pictures. These two black crows; these three white feathers;
 картина. Си́и два чёрный вóронъ; ть три бѣлый перо́;
 my four new books; these five petulant children. The
 мой четы́ре но́вый кни́га; э́ти пять рѣзвы́й дитя́. Оба
 two poor orphan boys, and the two unhappy orphan girls.
 бѣдный сиротá, и о́ба несчастный сиротá.

Two servants, three workmen, four children, six
 Дво́е слугá, трóе мастеровóй, четы́веро дитя́, шéстеро
 soldiers, two watches, three pairs of spectacles, five pairs
 солдáтъ, двóи часы *т*, трóи очкí *т*, пя́теры
 of scissors. The first hour and a half. The first forty days;
 но́жницы *ф*. Пѣрвый полторá часъ. Пѣрвый со́рокъ день;
 the second hundred crowns, and the last thousand florins.
 вторóй сто е́фимо́къ, и послѣднíй ты́сяча гу́льденъ.

I have bought an ox and a horse, a table and
 Я купи́лъ оди́нъ быкъ и оди́нъ ло́шадь *ф*, оди́нъ столъ и
 a mirror. Twenty one roobles, fifty one
 оди́нъ зѣркало. Два́дцать оди́нъ рубль *т*, пятьдеся́тъ оди́нъ
 kopecks. The thousand one nights. A young man of thirty
 копѣйка. Ты́сяча и оди́нъ но́чь *ф*. Молодо́й челове́къ три́дцать
 one years less twenty one days. Do not judge
 оди́нъ годъ безъ (*gen.*) два́дцать оди́нъ день *т*. Не суди́

of a man by a single fault and by a single
о (*prep.*) челове́къ по (*dat.*) о́днѣ просту́покъ и по о́днѣ
error. An officer with twenty one soldiers. Peter
ошиб́ка. Офице́ръ съ (*instr.*) двѣдцать о́днѣ солда́тъ. Петро́въ
the First and Catharine the Second reigned in the
Пе́рвыи и Ека́тери́на Вто́ройи ца́рствовали въ (*prep.*)
eighteenth century. The Swedes revere Charles XII, and
восемна́дцатый вѣкъ. Шве́дь уважа́ютъ Карль XII, а
the French have erected a monument to Henry IV. The
Францу́зъ поста́вили па́мятникъ Ге́нрихъ IV.
article was written on the 15th of the month of January,
Статья́ была́ пи́сана (*gen.*) 15 мѣсяцъ я́нваря *m*,
in the year 1823, and the event relates to the VI
го́дь 1823, и происше́ствіе отно́сится къ (*dat.*) VI
century, and particularly to the year 573.
вѣ́къ, а и́менно къ (*dat.*) го́дь 573.

A cupboard with a dozen of plates of porcelain, or
Шка́пъ съ (*instr.*) дю́жина тарѣ́лка фарфо́ровый, или́
with twelve plates of porcelain. A droshky drawn by
съ двѣ́надцать тарѣ́лка фарфо́ровый. Дро́жки, запря́женный (*instr.*)
a pair of bay horses, or by two bay horses; and a carriage
па́ра вороно́й ло́шадь, или́ два вороно́й ло́шадь; и ка́рета
drawn by six sorrel horses, or by a team of six
запря́женный (*instr.*) ше́сть ры́жий ло́шадь, или́ ше́стёрка
sorrel horses. The town is situated a thousand wersts
ры́жий ло́шадь. Го́родъ ле́житъ въ (*prep.*) ты́сяча верста́
from here, the village a hundred wersts, and the hamlet forty
отсю́да, се́ло во сто верста́, а дере́вня въ со́рокъ
wersts. At Moscow there were 1600 churches, or forty
верста́. Въ (*prep.*) Моско́ва́ было́ 1600 це́рковь, или́ со́рокъ
forties of churches. I am satisfied with eighty
со́рокъ це́рковь. Я дово́льствуюсь (*instr.*) во́семьдесятъ

roobles (or with two forties of roobles) a month,
 рубль *m* (или два сорокъ рубль) въ (*acc.*) мѣсяцъ,

i. e. with 960 roobles a year. He will not live till
 то есть 960 рубль въ (*acc.*) годъ. Онъ не доживётъ до (*gen.*)

forty years; and she died at forty three. She is
 сорокъ лѣто; и она умерла (*gen.*) сорокъ три лѣто. Она (*estъ*)

satisfied with forty kopecs, and she admired a
 довольный (*instr.*) сорокъ копѣйка, и она удивилась (*dat.*)

hundred pictures. He cannot live on less than a
 сто картина. Онъ не можетъ прожить мѣнѣе (*gen.*)

hundred thousand roobles a year. A town with two
 сто тысяча рубль *m* въ (*acc.*) годъ. Городъ съ (*instr.*) два

towers; a chest with six drawers; a house with forty windows;
 башня; комодъ съ шесть ящикъ; домъ съ сорокъ окно;

a fortress with a hundred cannons; a church with five
 крѣпость *f* со сто пушка; церковь *f* о (*prep.*) пять

cupolas; a house of three stories; a village with four
 глава; домъ о (*prep.*) три ярусъ; деревня съ (*instr.*) тетыре

wind-mills. I love equally the two sons and the two
 вѣтряный мельница. Я люблю равно оба сынъ и оба

daughters. He has four children, and she has left five
 дочь *f*. Онъ имѣетъ четверо дитя, а она оставила пятеро

orphans. My brother has not been able to manage these two
 сиротѣ. Мой братъ не могъ слѣдить съ (*instr.*) этими два

restive horses. He has lived long with his five
 упрямый лошади *f*. Онъ жилъ долго съ (*instr.*) своими пять

cousins german. To this million of old Prussian
 братъ двоюродный. Къ (*dat.*) этому миллионъ старый прусскій

crowns must be added a thousand of these new roobles.
 ефимокъ надобно прибавить тысяча тѣхъ новый рубль *m*.

To each a hundred roobles and forty kopecs.
 Каждый по (*dat.*) сто рубль *m* и по (*dat.*) сорокъ копѣйка.

Some months have thirty days
 Въ (*prep.*) нѣкоторый мѣсяцъ (*есмь*) по (*dat.*) тридцать день *m*,
 and others thirty one days. In each coachhouse
 а въ другой по тридцать одинъ день. Въ (*prep.*) каждый сарай
 there were two carriages, and in each carriage
 было по (*nom.*) два карѣта, а въ каждый карѣта по (*nom.*)
 three men, and four women. To each a hundred and
 три мужчи́на и по четы́ре же́нщина. Каждый по (*dat.*) сто по
 ninety roobles and forty five kopecks. We
 девяно́сто рубль *m* и по со́рокъ по пять ко́пѣйка. У насъ
 have each twenty seven points. Every part of
 (*есмь*) по (*dat.*) двѣдцать по семь очкѣй *m*. Каждый часть *f*
 the work is sold at the rate of a rooble and a half of silver.
 сочи́неніе прода́ется по (*dat.*) полтора́ рубль *m* (*instr.*) серебро́.

By the morning one must not judge of midday. During
 По (*dat.*) утро́ не до́лжно суди́ть о (*prep.*) по́лдень *m*. Въ (*acc.*)
 the first half day he did not know what to do. At
 пе́рвый полд́ня онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ (*acc.*)
 four o' clock in the morning, or at five o' clock in the
 четы́ре часъ по (*prep.*) по́лночь *f*, или въ пять часъ по
 afternoon. That happened during the latter half of
 по́лдень *m*. Это случи́лось въ (*acc.*) послѣ́дній по́лгода
 the year 1844. The first half hour passed quietly. During
 годъ 1844. Пе́рвый полча́са про́шлѣ споко́йно. Въ (*acc.*)
 the space of the first half hour. I had a hundred and
 продо́лженіе пе́рвый полча́са. За мно́ю было́ полтора́ста
 fifty thousand roobles of annual revenue.
 ты́сяча рубль *m* годово́й дохо́дь.

THE PRONOUNS.

Division
of the
pronouns.

44. — The *pronouns* (мѣстоимѣнія) in Russian are divided into seven kinds.

1. The *personal* pronouns (личныя) are, in the first person: я, *I*; plur. мы, *we*; in the second ты, *thou*; plur. вы, *you*; and in the third person онъ, *he* (fem. она, *she*; neut. оно, *it*); plur. они, *they* (fem. онѣ, *they*). There is in Russian another personal pronoun, which is applied to all the three persons and both numbers, and which is used when the action of the object returns on the agent: e. g. я себя знаю, *I know myself*; ты себя бережѣшь, *thou takest care of thyself*; мы себя обманываемъ, *we deceive ourselves*. This is called the *reflected* (возвратное) personal pronoun.

When the reflected pronoun is used at the end of the verbs, it is contracted into *ся* or *сь*; e. g. домъ стрóится, *the house is being built*; я моюсь, *I wash myself* (instead of стрóить себя, мою себя).

2. The *possessive* pronouns (притяжательныя) are, in the first person: мой, *my* or *mine*; нашъ, *our* or *ours*; in the second person: твой, *thy* or *thine*: вашъ, *your* or *yours*; and for all the three persons: the reflected свой, *my, thy, his, our, your, their*.

In Russian there is no possessive pronoun for the third person: its place being supplied by the genitive of the personal pronoun: его, *of him* or *his*; ея, *of her* or *her*; ихъ, *of them* or *their*; e. g. я былъ у его брата, *I have been to his brother* (to the brother of him); я знаю ея мужа, *I know her husband* (the husband of her); я это дѣлаю для ихъ дѣтей, *I do that for their children* (for the children of them).

3. The *demonstrative* pronouns (указательныя) are: сей, этотъ, оный, *this*; тотъ, *that*; такой, таковóй, толикий, *such* or *such an one*.

4. The *relative* pronouns (относительныя) are: кто, *who* or *he who*; что, *which* or *that which*; котóрый, кой, *who*; какóй, каковóй, коlíкій, *who* or *he who*; чей, *whose*; скóлько, *how much* or *so much*.

5. The *interrogative* pronouns (вопросительныя) are the same as the relative.

6. The *determinative* (опредѣлительныя) or *ampliative* (дополнительныя) pronouns are: самъ, сáмый, *self*; весь, *all*; кáждый, всѣ́кій, *each*. To this class belong also the numerals оди́нь, *a single one* or *one only*, and óба, *both*.

The pronouns самъ and сáмый have the same meaning, but the former is used with the personal pronouns and with the names of animate objects, the latter with the demonstrative pronouns and the names of inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. я самъ, *myself*; онъ самъ, *himself*; самогó себя, *one's self*; отéцъ самъ, *the father himself*; тотъ сáмый, сей сáмый, *the very same*; сáмая смерть, *death itself*. The pronoun сáмый before a qualifying adjective expresses the superlative (§ 38. 3).

7. The *indefinite* pronouns (неопредѣлённыя) are: нѣ́кто, *somebody*; нѣ́что, *something*; никтó, *nobody*; ничтó, *nothing*; кто ли́бо, кто нибу́дь, кто-то, кто ни есть, *whoever*; что ли́бо, что нибу́дь, что-то, что ни есть, *whatever*; нѣ́кій, нѣ́какій, нѣ́который, какóй-то, *some*; ни какóй, ни котóрый, ни оди́нь, *not any, none*; другóй, инóй, прóчій, *other*; стóлько, *as much, as far*; нѣ́сколько, *some*; мнóго, *much*; ма́ло, *little*; другъ дру́га, *each other*; тотъ и дру́гой, *the one and the other*; вся́къ, *each*.

45. — The pronouns are either substantive or adjective. 1) The *substantive* pronouns are: я, ты, онъ, себя, кто, что, нѣ́кто, нѣ́что, никтó, ничтó,

PARADIGMS OF THE DECLENSION OF THE PRONOUNS.

SINGULAR.

Masculine and neuter genders.

PARADIGMS :	Nom. or Acc.	G. or A.	Dat.	Instr.	Pref.
1.	я, I	меня, my	мнѣ, mine	мною, me	мною, me
2.	ты, thou	тебѣ, thee	тебѣ, thee	тобою, thee	тобою, thee
3.	онъ, he	его, his	ему, him	имъ, him	нѣмъ, him
4.	—, himself	себѣ, self	себѣ, self	собою, self	себѣ, self
5.	кто, who, he who	кого, whom	кому, whom	кемъ, whom	кемъ, whom
6.	что, which, that which	чего, what	чему, what	чѣмъ, what	чѣмъ, what
7.	мой, my	моего, my	моему, my	моимъ, my	моимъ, my
8.	нашъ, our	нашего, our	нашему, our	нашимъ, our	нашимъ, our
9.	сей, this	его, this	ему, this	имъ, this	сѣмъ, this
10.	тотъ, that	того, that	тому, that	тѣмъ, that	тѣмъ, that
11.	это, this	этого, this	этому, this	этимъ, this	этимъ, this
12.	чей, whose	чьего, whose	чьему, whose	чьимъ, whose	чьимъ, whose
13.	самъ, self	самого, self	самому, self	самимъ, self	самимъ, self
14.	всѣ, all	всего, all	всему, all	всѣмъ, all	всѣмъ, all
15.	одинъ, one	одного, one	одному, one	однимъ, one	однимъ, one
16.	какой, such as	какого, such as	какому, such as	какимъ, such as	какимъ, such as

Feminine gender.

PLURAL.

PARADIGMS :	Nom. G.D. and P. Acc.	Instr.	N. or A. G.A. and P. Dat.	Instr.
1.	я, I	мною, me	нами, we	нами, we
2.	ты, thou	тобою, thee	вами, you	вами, you
3.	онъ, he	имъ, him	ими, they	ими, they
4.	—, himself	собою, self	сими, self	сими, self
5.	кто, who, he who	кемъ, whom	кеми, whom	кеми, whom
6.	что, which, that which	чѣмъ, what	чѣми, what	чѣми, what
7.	мой, my	моимъ, my	моими, my	моими, my
8.	нашъ, our	нашимъ, our	нашими, our	нашими, our
9.	сей, this	сѣмъ, this	сими, this	сими, this
10.	тотъ, that	тѣмъ, that	тѣми, that	тѣми, that
11.	это, this	этимъ, this	этими, this	этими, this
12.	чей, whose	чьимъ, whose	чьими, whose	чьими, whose
13.	самъ, self	самимъ, self	самими, self	самими, self
14.	всѣ, all	всѣмъ, all	всѣми, all	всѣми, all
15.	одинъ, one	однимъ, one	одними, one	одними, one
16.	какой, such as	какимъ, such as	какими, such as	какими, such as

The *tonic accent* in the declension of the pronouns is, with some rare exceptions, placed on the terminations of the cases, as is seen in the accompanying paradigms.

of which one only (*онъ*) has all the three genders; *себя*, *кто*, *что* are the same in both numbers, and *себя* has no nominative. 2) All the other pronouns are *adjective*, and like the adjectives they have three genders, two numbers and seven cases, and agree with the substantive to which they belong.

46. — The substantive pronouns are declined in a peculiar manner as will be seen later. Those of the adjective pronouns which end like the adjectives, in *ый* and *й* (or *ой*), fem. *ая*, neut. *ое*, such as: *который*, *оный*, *самый*, *каждый*, *таковой*, *всякий*, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of adjectives (§ 41); while such as have a termination differing from that of the adjectives, such as: *мой*, *нашъ*, *самъ*, *сей*, also *такой* and *какой*, are declined in a particular way.

Declension
of the
pronouns.

The following observations on the declension of pronouns are necessary.

1. The oblique cases of the pronoun of the third person (3d paradigm) take the euphonic letter *н*, when they are preceded by a preposition; e. g. *у него*, *to him*; *къ нему*, *towards him*; *съ нею*, *with her*; *о нёмъ*, *of him*; *безъ нихъ*, *without them*, &c. But this addition does not take place when the genitive *его*, *ей*, *ихъ*, serves as a possessive pronoun; e. g. *въ его домъ*, *in his house*; *къ ихъ пользѣ*, *to their advantage*. — The genitive singular feminine of this pronoun sometimes takes the inflection of the accusative; e. g. *я её не видѣлъ* (instead of *ей*), *I have not seen her*; *у неё* (instead of *у ней*), *to her*, and this inflection is sometimes contracted: *у ней*.

2. According to the 5th and 6th paradigms (*кто* and *что*) are declined the pronouns compounded from *кто* and *что*; e. g. *никто*, *nobody*; *ничто*, *nothing*; *нѣкто*, *кто нибудь*, *кто либо*, *кто-то*, *somebody*; *нѣчто*, *что нибудь*, *что либо*, *что-то*, *something*; remarking that, if there be a preposition with *никто* and *ничто*, it is placed between the particle *ни* and the pronoun;

e. g. НИ У КОГО́, *to nobody*; НИ КЪ ЧЕМУ́, *to nothing*; НИ ЗА ЧТО, *for nothing*; НИ СЪ КЪМЪ, *with nobody*; and also observing that the parts *нибۇдь*, *любо* and *то* are invariable.

3. According to the 7th paradigm (мой) are declined the pronouns ТВОЙ, *thy*; СВОЙ, *his*, and КОЙ, *who*, observing that this last is not used in the nominative and accusative singular of any of the genders, and that it has the tonic accent in all the cases on the first syllable (КО́его, КО́н, КО́нхъ, &c.). Its compound НѢКІЙ, *some*, is declined in the same manner in the singular; but in the plural it takes the inflections of the adjectives: *N.* НѢКІе, *f.* НѢКІя; *G.* НѢКІхъ, *D.* НѢКІмъ, &c.

4. According to the 8th paradigm (нашъ) is declined the pronoun ВАШЪ, *your*.

5. According to the 16th paradigm (како́й) are declined тако́й, *such*; нѣкакій, *some*, and этакій, *such an one*.

6. The other pronouns which have the adjective termination *ый* and *ій* or *ой* (fem. *ая*, neut. *ое*), such as: о́ный, са́мый, вся́кій, друго́й, ино́й, каково́й, таково́й, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of the adjectives (§ 41). The pronouns каково́й and таково́й have also the apocopated termination: *како́вѣз* and *тако́вѣз*. In the pronoun другъ дру́га, *each other*, which is used for the three genders and both numbers, the first part remains indeclinable, while the second is declined like a substantive; *G.* другъ дру́га, *D.* другъ дру́гу, *A.* другъ дру́га, *I.* другъ дру́гомъ, *P.* другъ о дру́гъ. The pronouns самъ-дру́гъ, *two together*; самъ-третей, *three together*, &c., are indeclinable and are used for all the three persons, the three genders and both numbers.

7. The pronoun *всякъ* is used instead of *всякій человекъ*, but only in the masculine singular. The pronouns *ско́лько*, *столько*, *нѣсколько*, have in the singular, besides this termination which serves both for the nominative and accusative, only the dative in *у* with the preposition *по* (*по ско́лку*, &c.); and in the plural they have only the genitive, the dative, the instrumental and the prepositional cases (*ско́лкихъ*, *ско́лкимъ*, *ско́лкими*, &c.).

8. *Оди́нъ* (parad. 15) is both a numerative and a determinative pronoun. The same is the case with the Slavonic word

единъ (*n.* едино, *f.* едина), which is used in an elevated style, and which is declined in the singular like an adjective of the full termination: *G.* еди́наго, еди́ной; *D.* еди́ному, &c.; but in the plural it takes the apocopated form: еди́ны, еди́ныхъ, еди́нымъ.

EXERCISES ON THE PRONOUNS.

I love thee, and thou offendest me. We esteem him, Personal
pronouns.
Я люблю ты, а ты обижаешь я. Я уважаемъ онъ,

as to her, we love her sincerely. I have much money,
а онъ я люблюмъ душевно. У (*gen.*) я (*est*) много денеги,

and thou hast not a penny. Protect him, and
а у (*gen.*) ты нѣтъ ни (*gen.*) копѣйка. Заступись за (*acc.*) онъ, и

depend upon her. Take a seat with me, and come
понадѣйся на (*acc.*) онъ. Посиди съ (*instr.*) я, и приходи

with him. Tell her, to come to me. Without
съ (*instr.*) онъ. Скажи онъ, чтоб онъ пришлѣ ко (*dat.*) я. Безъ (*gen.*)

him, without her and without you, life is wearisome to me.
онъ, безъ онъ и безъ ты, жизнь (*est*) скучный я.

I do not see them, and I will do every thing for them.
Я не вижу онъ, а я сдѣлаю всё для (*gen.*) онъ.

We esteem you, and you have forgotten us. Depend
Я уважаемъ ты, а ты забыли я. Будь увѣренъ

on me; I will speak of thee. It is agreeable to me
во (*prep.*) я; я поговорю о (*prep.*) ты. (*est*) Приятно я

to be with her. I do not trust myself, and thou art
быть съ (*instr.*) онъ. Я не доверяю себя, а ты (*est*)

contented with thyself. We take care of ourselves, and they
довольный (*instr.*) себя. Я бережёмъ себя, а онъ

do themselves harm.

себя вредятъ.

Possessive
pronouns.

My brother, thy sister and his son have studied together.

Мой братъ, твой сестра́ и онъ сынъ учились вмѣстѣ.

I try to be agreeable to your master and to our
Я стараюсь угодить вашъ учитель *т* и нашъ

inspector. My house is more beautiful than thine, and
смотритель *т*. Мой домъ (*есть*) красивый (*gen.*) твой, а

thy dog is less than mine. I live without them,
твой собака (*есть*) малый (*gen.*) мой. Я живу безъ (*gen.*) онъ,

and I can dispense with their help. Do not boast
и могу обойтись безъ (*gen.*) онъ помощь *ф*. Не хвались (*instr.*)

of thy labours, and think of thy years. Draw near
свой трудъ, а подумай о (*prep.*) свой лѣто. Подойди къ (*dat.*)

my table, and give some money to thy sister. We talk
мой столъ, и подарь (*gen.*) деньги *ф* твой сестра́. Я говоримъ

about our affairs, and you occupy yourself with your lesson.
о (*prep.*) свой дѣло, а ты занимаетесь (*instr.*) свой урокъ.

Study is bitter, but its fruits are sweet. Thy gardens
Ученіе (*есть*) горькій, но онъ плодъ (*суть*) сладкій. Твой садъ

are superb; I admire their beauties.

(*суть*) прекрасный; я удивляюсь онъ (*dat.*) красота́.

Demonstra-
tive pro-
nouns.

Dost thou see this dog and this cat, these men and

Видишь ли этотъ собака и этотъ котъ, этотъ люди *т* и

those trees? In these countries there is no gold; and
тотъ дерево? Въ (*prep.*) этотъ земля нтъ (*gen.*) золото; и

in those no silver. I have heard that from
въ (*prep.*) тотъ нтъ (*gen.*) серебро. Я слышалъ этотъ отъ (*gen.*)

your brother, but I do not believe it. I praise your
вашъ братъ, но я не вѣрю (*dat.*) этотъ. Я хвалю вашъ

project; it is long since I had foreseen it. Have you
намѣреніе; давно я предвидѣлъ оный. Живёшь ли

lived long in this town? I admire this garden,
ты давно въ (*prep.*) сей городъ? Я удивляюсь (*dat.*) этотъ садъ,

but that is more beautiful. These pens are blunt; these
 а тотъ (*есть*) хоро́шій. Э́тотъ перо́ (*суть*) тупо́й; сей
 houses are of stone; these streets are narrow. Such eyes
 домо́ ка́менный; тотъ у́лица у́зкій. Тако́й глазь
 are piercing; such actions do not do honour.
 (*суть*) про́ницательный; тако́й де́ло не прино́сять (*ген.*) че́сть.

Such are men.
 Такого́й (*суть*) лю́ди *т.*

The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the substantive to which they belong, and take the *case* required by the following verb, with the exception of the pronoun *чей*, which agrees in gender, number and case with the accompanying substantive. Relative pronouns.

The man whom you see, is very intelligent.
 Чело́вѣкъ, кото́рый ты ви́дите, (*есть*) о́чень у́мный.

The book which you read is very agreeable. I know
 Кни́га, кото́рый ты чита́ете, (*есть*) о́чень прі́ятный. Я зна́ю
 the affair of which you speak. The water with which
 де́ло, о (*преп.*) кото́рый ты гово́рите. Во́да, (*instr.*) кото́рый

I wash myself, is very cold. Beware of him who
 я мо́юсь, (*есть*) о́чень хо́лодный. Береги́сь (*ген.*) тотъ, кто
 flatters thee. He who has much business,
 льсти́тъ (*dat.*) ты. Тотъ у (*ген.*) кто (*есть*) мно́го (*ген.*) де́ло,
 does not think of pleasures. Learn that which
 не ду́маетъ о (*преп.*) заб́ава. Учи́тесь (*dat.*) тотъ, (*ген.*)

you are ignorant of. Here is cloth like that of which I
 что ты не зна́ете. Вотъ (*ном.*) сукно́ тако́й, како́й я
 bought some. Such was the chief, such were the soldiers.
 купи́лъ. Какого́й былъ военача́льникъ, таково́й и вои́нъ.

That is the friend, in whose hands is my destiny.
 Вотъ (*ном.*) дру́гъ, въ (*преп.*) че́й рука́ (*есть*) мой судьба́.

Listen to those in whose house thou hast lived.
 Слу́шайся (*ген.*) тотъ, въ (*преп.*) че́й домо́ ты жи́лъ.

There is a book (*of those*) such as there are few of, and
 Вотъ книга (*изъ gen. такой*), (*gen.*) какой (*есть*) máло, и
 an opportunity like those are rare.

случай каковой (*суть*) рѣдкій.

Interroga-
 tive pro-
 nouns.

What o'clock is it, and at what o'clock wilt
 Который часъ (*есть*), и въ (*prep.*) который часъ

thou come? With what books dost thou occupy thyself, and
 прийдёшь? (*instr.*) Какой книга занимаешься, и

what people live here? Under what chief
 какой люди *т* живутъ здѣсь? Подъ (*instr.*) который начальникъ

dost thou serve, and what language dost thou learn? Whose
 ты служишь, и (*dat.*) какой языкъ ты учишься? Чей

are these houses? By whose permission hast thou
 (*суть*) этотъ домъ? Съ (*gen.*) чей позволеніе ты вышелъ

gone out? I have not seen whose hat has been thrown
 со двора? Я не видалъ, чей шляпа бросили

to the ground. I do not know with whose children she
 на (*acc.*) полъ. Я не знаю, съ (*instr.*) чей дитя онъ

is walking. About what dost thou trouble thyself, and
 гуляетъ. О (*prep.*) что ты заботишься, и

in what way have I deserved thy friendship? On what
 (*instr.*) что я заслужилъ твой дружба? Съ (*instr.*) что

can one congratulate thee, and from whom hast thou
 можно поздравить ты, и отъ (*gen.*) кто ты

received this money? How many wersts are there
 получилъ этотъ деньги? Сколько (*gen.*) верста (*есть*) отъ

from this town to that? Of how many volumes
 (*gen.*) этотъ городъ до (*gen.*) тотъ? Изъ (*gen.*) сколько томъ

is this work composed? How many roobles
 сей сочиненіе состоитъ? По (*dat.*) сколько (*gen.*) рубль *т*

will fall to you to each of this profit?
 достанется ты изъ (*gen.*) этотъ прибыль?

Thou thyself wilt be of my opinion: the sound even of his ^{Determinative pronouns.}
 Ты самъ согласишься съ (*instr.*) я: звукъ сáмый онъ
 voice is agreeable. I take this apartment of the
 гóлосъ (*еств*) пріятный. Я нанимáю сей кварти́ра у (*gen.*)
 proprietor himself. Vices themselves find with you an
 хозяи́нъ самъ. Поро́къ сáмый находятъ у (*gen.*) ты
 excuse. He always speaks of himself. You are
 извинéніе. Онъ всегда говоритъ о (*prep.*) себя самъ. Ты (*есте*)
 discontented with yourselves. We have seen her herself.
 недовóльный (*instr.*) себя самъ. Я ви́дѣли онъ самъ.
 Death itself is not frightful. We all content ourselves
 Смерть *f* сáмый (*еств*) не стра́шный. Я весь дово́льствуюсь
 with our only salaries. So think women alone. We
 (*instr.*) оди́нь жáлованье. Такъ дúмаютъ жéнщина оди́нь. Я
 two will serve God alone. In each assembly
 óба хоти́мъ служи́ть (*dat.*) Богъ еди́нь. Въ (*prep.*) кáждый собра́ніе
 there were citizens of both sexes. They are scattered
 были гражда́ннъ óба по́ль. Онъ (*суть*) разсѣяны
 in all the world. One must accustom one's self to
 по (*dat.*) весь свѣтъ. На́добно приви́каты́ къ (*dat.*)
 every food.
 вся́кій пи́ща.

There is not anybody here; do not ask help ^{of Indefinite pronouns.}
 Нѣтъ (*gen.*) ни́кто здѣсь; не про́си (*gen.*) по́мощь *f* у (*gen.*)
 anybody. Thou eatest nothing, and that serves no
 ни́кто. Ты не ѣшь (*gen.*) ни́что, и э́тотъ не годи́тся къ (*dat.*)
 purpose. Learn something, and say that to somebody.
 ни́что. Учи́сь (*dat.*) что ни́бу́дь, и скажи́ э́тотъ кто ни́бу́дь.
 I will not sell my house for any thing in the world, and
 Я не прода́мъ (*gen.*) свой до́мъ за (*acc.*) ни́что, и
 you have sold yours for a mere nothing. Of nothing
 ты про́дали свой за ни́что. Изъ (*gen.*) ни́что

one can make nothing. During the space of some
 не сдѣлаешь (*gen.*) ничто́. Въ (*acc.*) течѣніе нѣсколько
 months he has bought every day some
 мѣсяць онъ покупалъ ежедневно по (*dat.*) нѣсколько (*gen.*)
 hundreds of peasants.
 сто душа́.

The two sisters speak badly of each other. The
 Оба сестра́ говорятъ дурно́ другъ о (*prep.*) другъ.

Englishmen and the French detest each other. We are
 Англичани́нъ и Францу́зъ ненави́дятъ другъ дру́га. Я
 going to take a walk with one another. These houses
 ходимъ гуля́ть другъ съ (*instr.*) другъ. Сей домъ
 are situated one behind the other. The boards are thrown
 лежа́тъ оди́нь за (*instr.*) друго́й. Доска́ (*суть*) набро́саны
 one with another.
 оди́нь съ (*instr.*) друго́й.

THE VERB.

Division of
 verbs.

47. — The *verbs* (глаго́лы) of the Russian language are divided, according to their meaning, into four classes, which are called *voices* (залогъ), viz:

1. The *active verbs* (дѣйствительные), such as: дѣлать, *to make*; любить, *to love*; мыть, *to wash*; одѣвать, *to clothe*.

2. The *pronominal verbs* (мѣстоимѣнные), formed of active verbs by means of the reflected pronoun *ся*, contracted from *себя*. These verbs are: *a) reflected* (возвратные), as: мыться, *to wash one's self*; одѣваться, *to dress one's self*; *b) reciprocal* (взаимные), as: обниматься, *to embrace each other*; ссориться, *to dispute with each other*; and *c) common* (общіе), which with the termination of reflected

and reciprocal verbs have an active or neuter meaning, as: боя́ться, *to fear*; сме́яться, *to laugh*.

3. The *neuter* verbs (сре́дние), as: спать, *to sleep*; сто́ять, *to stand*. To this class also belong the *inchoative* (начина́тельные), as: бѣлѣть, *to whiten, become white*; со́хнуть, *to dry, become dry*. Among these verbs two are to be distinguished from the rest; viz: the neuter verb бы́ть, *to be*, and the inchoative стать, *to become*, which help to form and conjugate the other verbs, and which on that account are called *auxiliaries* (вспомога́тельные).

4. The *passive* verbs (страда́тельные), as: бы́ть любима́ымъ, *to be loved*; бы́ть почита́емымъ, *to be venerated*; дѣло сдѣлано, *the thing is accomplished*.

The reflected voice is often used in the passive sense, especially when applied to inanimate objects, e. g. дѣло дѣлается, *the thing is being accomplished*; домъ стро́ится, *the house is being built*.

48. — The principal inflections of the Russian verbs are: *tense* (вре́мя), *aspect* (видѣ) and *mood* (накло́неніе), and the secondary inflections are: *person* (лицѣ), *number* (число́) and *gender* (родѣ). Inflections of the verb.

49. — The *tenses* of the Russian verbs are only three in number: 1) the *present* (настоя́щее вре́мя); 2) the *preterit* (проше́дшее), and 3) the *future* (бу́дущее), as: я чита́ю, *I read*; я чита́лъ, *I have read*; я бу́ду чита́ть, *I shall read*. Tenses.

50. — Though the Russian verbs have only these three tenses, they have other inflections to indicate duration, accomplishment, reiteration, or other circumstances accompanying the action. These shades, or varieties of meaning, to which the Russian grammarians have given the name of *aspects* or Aspects.

degrees, are expressed by a change of termination or by means of the prepositions. The prepositions, being joined to verbs, form the *prepositional* (предложные) verbs, while such as have no preposition are termed *simple* (простые) or *α-prepositional*. This division of the verbs has an influence on the number and nature of their aspects. The following are the aspects of the Russian verbs.

1. The *imperfect* aspect (несовершенный видъ), which indicates that the action is being, has been, or will be performed without intimating, whether it is or will be finished; e. g. я дѣлаю, *I make*; я дѣлалъ, *I was occupied to make*; я буду дѣлать, *I shall make*; я просмáтриваю, *I examine*, я просмáтривалъ, *I set about examining*; я буду просмáтривать, *I shall examine*. This aspect is subdivided into definite and indefinite.

a) The *definite* (опредѣлённый) imperfect aspect indicates that the action is performed at a given moment: e. g. птица летитъ, *the bird flies (is flying now)*; заяцъ бѣжитъ, *the hare runs (is running at this moment)*.

b) The *indefinite* (неопредѣлённый) imperfect aspect expresses the action in an indeterminate manner, without reference to the time when it is performed, and also indicates that the acting person is accustomed to perform, or has the power of performing the action: e. g. птицы летаютъ, *the birds fly (have the power of flying)*; зайцы бѣгаютъ, *the hares run (are accustomed to run)*.

The definite and indefinite meaning of the imperfect aspect is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the case of verbs which express movement or change of place. The

other verbs, having properly speaking only the indefinite imperfect aspect, take the definite meaning without changing their termination; e. g. *Васілій теперъ пьѣтъ квасъ*, *Basil is now drinking kwass*; *Васілій пьѣтъ и квасъ и воду, что попадѣтся*, *Basil drinks both kwass and water, whichever happens to be there*.

2. The *perfect* aspect (совершенный), which indicates that the action has been, or will be entirely finished; e. g. *я сдѣлалъ*, *I have made, I have finished*; *я сдѣлаю*, *I shall make, I shall finish making*; *я просмотрѣлъ*, *I have entirely examined*; *я просмотрю*, *I shall finish examining*. This aspect is subdivided into aspect of duration and aspect of unity.

a) The perfect aspect of *duration* (длительный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed by many movements, and has had or will have any duration; e. g. *птицы выклевали ему глаза*, *the birds have put out his eyes with beak-strokes*; *я пропою пѣсню*, *I shall sing over this air*.

b) The perfect aspect of *unity* (однократный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed only once, and has lasted only a moment; e. g. *я зъвнулъ*, *I have yawned, I have made a yawn*; *онъ трѣнетъ ещё разъ ваше хладное сердце*, *he will once more touch your insensible heart*; *птица выклюнула ему глазъ*, *the bird has put out to him an eye*.

3. The *iterative* aspect (многократный), which indicates that the action has been performed repeatedly, and that it is long passed; e. g. *въ молодѣя лѣта я живалъ въ деревнѣ*, *in my youth I often lived in the country*.

On the subject of these aspects we have to make the following observations:

1. They are never all found in a single verb, as we shall see later. We merely observe in this place that the imperfect, perfect of unity and iterative aspects are found in the simple verbs, while the perfect of duration is met with in the prepositional and some few simple verbs, enumerated further (§ 65. 8). The aspects of a simple verb are generally distinguished in the following manner: the *definite imperfect* aspect is found in verbs signifying movement; e. g. бѣгý, *I run (am running now)*; идý, *I go (am going at this moment)*; the aspect *perfect of unity* is found in verbs which designate a physical action of men or animals, and ends in нуть (preterit нулъ, future ну); e. g. шагнýть, *to take a step*; кашлянýть, *to cough once*; the *iterative* aspect usually ends in ывать or увать (preterit ывалъ or увалъ): e. g. дѣлывалъ, *he usually made*; говаривалъ, *he said at different times*. The other simple verbs, which have not these distinctive characters, are of the *indefinite imperfect* aspect. All these properties of the verbs will be examined subsequently (§§ 59—65).

2. The prepositions are particles which are joined to verbs to communicate to them the meaning of the completion of an action: e. g. дѣлать, *to make*, and сдѣлать, *to finish making, to have made*; писать, *to write*; and написать, *to finish writing, to have written*; and also to give them a particular meaning; e. g. хотѣть, *to go*, and входить, *to go in*; восходить, *to go up*; выходить, *to go out*; доходить, *to go up to, to attain*, &c.

3. The aspects have not all the same number of tenses; the imperfect aspect is used in all the three tenses; the perfect is employed in the preterit and future, while the iterative is met with only in the preterit.

Moods. 51. — The Russian verbs have only three *moods*, viz: 1) the *indicative* (изъявительное наклонѣніе), e. g. я хожý, *I walk*; мы гуляли, *we have taken a walk*, вы будете ужинать, *you will sup*; 2) the *imperative* (повелительное), e. g. ходи, *walk*; пойдѣмте, *let us go*; гуляйте, *take a walk*; and 3) the

infinitive (неокончательное), e. g. ходить, *to walk*; гулять, *to take a walk*; ужинать, *to sup.*—The indicative is the only mood which is found in all the tenses and all the aspects, the infinitive has inflections for the aspects, but has no tenses, as is also the case with the imperative, except that it is not used in the iterative aspect.

The *conditional* (предположительное) and *subjunctive* (сослагательное) moods of other languages are expressed in Russian by the preterit of indicative with the particle *бы*; e. g. я *желалъ бы ѣхать*, *I should wish* or *I should have wished to depart*; я *бы не думалъ, чтобы вы это сдѣлали*, *I should not have believed that you would have done that*.

52.—The indicative and imperative of the Russian verbs have further: 1) three inflections for the *persons*, e. g. читаю, *I read*; читаешь, *thou readest*; читаетъ, *he reads*; 2) two for the *numbers*; читаю, *I read*, and читаемъ, *we read*; читаешь, *thou readest*, and читаете, *you read*; читаетъ, *he reads*, and читаютъ, *they read*; читай, *read*, and читайте, *read (you)*; and 3) in the singular of the preterits, three for the *genders*, e. g. ученикъ читалъ, *the school-boy read*; дитя читало, *the child read*; служанка читала, *the maid read*.

The preterit of the Russian verbs is nothing but the past participle, in the apocopated form, joined to the substantive verb, which participle, like the attributive adjectives, was used, in the ecclesiastical Slavonic, in the apocopated termination, and with the three genders, e. g. азъ есмь сѣтворилъ, *I have created*; имѣла еси, *thou hast had* (in speaking to a woman). In Russian the auxiliary verb is understood, and we say: я сотворилъ, ты имѣла, and on this account the genders have become an inflection *of the preterits.

There are some verbs which are only used in the third person singular, without expressing the person either by a

noun or a pronoun, and which for that reason are called *impersonal* (безличныя). These verbs have only the neuter in the preterit; such are: *нѣтъ*, *there is not* (*pret.* нѣ было, *fut.* не бѣдетъ); *разсвѣтаетъ*, *it begins to dawn* (*pret.* разсвѣло, *fut.* разсвѣтѣтъ); *хочется*, *the mind takes* (*pret.* хотѣлось).

Forms deriv-
ed from the
verb.

53.—To complete our examination of all the parts of the Russian verbs, we will still add the forms which are derived from them; these are: 1) the *participle* (присѣтіе), 2) the *gerund* (дѣеприсѣтіе), and 3) the *verbal noun* (отглагольное имя).

1. The *participles*, as parts of the verb, have voice, aspect and tense; and as adjectives, gender, number and case. As regards *voice*, they are active, neuter or pronominal, and passive; they have the same number of *aspects* as the verbs from which they are derived; but they have only two *tenses*, the present and the preterit.

2. The *gerunds* are simply verbal adverbs, which are formed from the active and neuter participles and can take the different aspects of the present and preterit.

3. The *verbal nouns* are abstract nouns which being derived from the infinitive, indicate the particular action, expressed by the aspect, from which they are formed; e. g. бѣганіе, *an habitual running*; разбиваніе, *a defeat*; разбитіе, *a complete defeat* (from the infinitives бѣгать, разби́вать and разби́ть).

Conjugation.

54.—The changing of the inflections of the verbs in order to indicate the moods,* tenses, numbers, persons and genders, is called *conjugation* (спряженіе); and the verbs are divided, according to the

manner in which they are conjugated, into *regular* (п^ра́вильные) and *irregular* (неп^ра́вильные). 1) The *regular* verbs are such as have a polysyllabic infinitive, ending in *ть* preceded by a vowel; e. g. дѣлать, *to make*; гулять, *to take a walk*; имѣть, *to have*; говорить, *to speak*; колѳть, *to sting*; тянуть, *to draw*; терѣть, *to rub*. 2) The *irregular* verbs are such as have a monosyllabic infinitive, ending either in *ть* preceded by a consonant, or in *чь, ти* and *щу*; e. g. бить, *to beat*; брать, *to take*; слыть, *to pass for*; вести, *to conduct*; грызть, *to gnaw*; идти, *to go*; сѣчь, *to cut*.—The following remarks on the conjugation of verbs are important.

1. Each aspect of a verb, having necessarily an infinitive, is conjugated separately, without being mixed up with the other aspects of this verb.

2. The *infinitive* in verbs is the same as the nominative in nouns: this mood is the *direct* form, whence all the others, called the *oblique*, are derived. It ends in *ть* (seldom in *чь, ти, щу*).

3. The *present*, which is only found in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite), ends, in the first person of the singular, in *ю* or *у* (very rarely in *мъ* and *мь*).

4. The *preterit*, which is found in all the aspects, ends in *лъ* and sometimes in *ъ* (neut. *ло*, fem. *ла*; plur. *ли*).

5. The *future* has no particular inflection: in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite) it is formed by the help of the auxiliary verbs бѣ́ду or стѣ́ну, joined to the infinitive; and in the perfect aspect (either of duration or of unity) this tense takes the form of the present.

6. The *imperative*, which is found in all the aspects, excepting the iterative aspect, ends, in the second person singular, in *и* with the accent, or, without accent, in *у* after two or three consonants, in *ь* after one consonant and in *и* after a vowel.

ACTIVE, NEUTER AND PRONOMINAL.

SECOND					THIRD.	
3rd branch.	4th branch.	5th branch.	6th branch.	7th branch.	1st branch.	2d branch.
ж ч ш щ	нть д ѣть з ать з нть д	м нть м ать ѣть к ать	с нть с ать ѣть х ать	ст нть ск ать ѣть ст ать	нуть	ереть
ж ч ш щ	жу жу ншь нть нмъ нте ать	жу жу ншь нть нмъ нте ать	жу жу сншь снть снмъ сите снятъ	жу жу стншь стнть стнмъ стите стнятъ	ну нень нетъ немъ нете нутъ	ру рень ретъ ремъ рете рутъ
ж ч ш щ	нль аль нли али	нль аль нли али	снль саль снли сали	стнль сталь стнли стали	нуль ль, ло, ла нули ли	еръ, ерю, ла ерли
either	definite	or indefinite)	for	the	three	conjugations.
ж ч ш щ	нъ бъ нть нте нте	нъ бъ нть нте нте	снъ сбъ снть снте снте	стнъ стбъ стнть стнте стнте	нъ нбъ нть нте нте	ри ри нте нте

Regular
verbs.

55.—The *regular* verbs are divided into three *conjugations*, according to the ending of the infinitive and the formation of the first person of the present.

1. The *first* conjugation embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *mb* with one of the vowels *a*, *я* or *ь*, and of which the first person singular of the present is in *ю* with a vowel. This conjugation is subdivided into four *branches*, viz:

	1st branch.	2d branch.	3rd branch.	4th branch.
Infinitive:	ать	о е вать	ять	ѣть
Present:	аю	у ю	яю	ѣю

Examples: 1) дѣлать, *to make*, дѣлаю; 2) рисовать, *to draw*, рисую; плевать, *to spit*, плюю; 3) гулять, *to take a walk*, гуляю; 4) имѣть, *to have*, имѣю.

2. The *second* conjugation embraces such verbs as end in the infinitive in *mb* preceded by *u* or *o*, and by other vowels with a changeable consonant, and the first person in the present of which is in *ю* preceded by a consonant (sometimes by a vowel) or, according to the nature of the hissing letters, in *иу*, *чу*, *шу* and *щу*. This conjugation is subdivided into 7 *branches*, in the following order:

	1st br.	2d br.	3rd br.	4th br.	5th br.	6th br.	7th br.
Infinitive:	б н ѣть о ф	в нть мъть п ать ф	ж ч нть ш ать щ	л нть з ѣть ать	т нть к ѣть ать	с нть х ѣть ать	ст нть ск ѣть ать
Present:	ю . .	лю .	у . .	жу . .	чу . .	шу . .	щу .

Examples: 1) говорить, *to speak*, говорю; велѣть, *to order*, велю; колоть, *to sting*, колю; 2) любить, *to love*, люблю; терпѣть,

to suffer, терплю; дремать, *to slumber*, дремлю; 3) тужить, *to grieve*, тужу; кричать, *to cry*, кричу; 4) водить, *to lead*, вожу; видеть, *to see*, вижу; мазать, *to anoint*, мажу; 5) платить, *to pay*, плачу; вертеть, *to turn*, верчу; плакать, *to weep*, плачу; 6) просить, *to ask*, прошу; висеть, *to be suspended*, виси; пахать, *to cultivate*, пашу; 7) чистить, *to clean*, чищу; хрустеть, *to crack*, хрущу; искать, *to seek*, ищу.

3. The *third* conjugation embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *нутъ* and in *ветъ*, the first person of which is in *у* preceded by a palatal consonant (*н, р*). This conjugation is subdivided into 2 branches, thus:

	1st branch.	2d branch.
Infinitive:	нутъ	ветъ
Present:	ну	ру

Examples: 1) тянуть, *to draw*, тяну; 2) тереть, *to rub*, тру.

The three conjugations of the regular verbs and their various branches, as also the inflections of the moods, tenses and persons, are shown in the preceding table (pages 120 sq.).

56.—In the conjugation of the regular verbs the following rules relating to the formation of the various inflections are to be attended to.

Formation
of the in-
flections of
the verb.

1. The *second person* of the present is formed: *a*) from the first person in all the verbs of the Ist and IIId conjugation, as also in those of the IIId in *омъ*, and in *амъ* when not preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *ю* or *у* into *ешь*; *b*) from the infinitive in the verbs of the IIId conjugation ending in *умъ*, *нъмъ*, and in *амъ* preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *умъ*, *нъмъ* or *амъ* into *ишь*. The other persons are formed from the second. The present has generally the following inflections:

PERSONS:	1.				2.				3.				4.			
	SINGULAR.															
1.	...	ю	...	у	...	ю	...	у	...	ю	...	у	...	ю	...	у
2.	...	ешь	...	ешь	...	ишь	...	ишь	...	ишь	...	ишь	...	ишь	...	ишь
3.	...	етъ	...	етъ	...	итъ	...	итъ	...	итъ	...	итъ	...	итъ	...	итъ
	PLURAL.															
1.	...	емъ	...	емъ	...	имъ	...	имъ	...	имъ	...	имъ	...	имъ	...	имъ
2.	...	ете	...	ете	...	ите	...	ите	...	ите	...	ите	...	ите	...	ите
3.	...	ютъ	...	утъ	...	ятъ	...	ятъ (атъ)	...	ятъ	...	ятъ	...	ятъ	...	ятъ
For verbs of the I conjug. and for those in <i>омъ</i> , 1st br. and in <i>амъ</i> , 2d br. of the II conj. (See the parad. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 10 and 12.)				For verbs of the III conj. and for those in <i>амъ</i> , 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. of the II conj. (See the paradigms 15, 17, 19, 21, 22, 23, 24 and 25.)				For verbs of the II conj. 1st and 2d br. (except those in <i>омъ</i> and in <i>амъ</i>). (See the paradigms 8, 9, and 11.)				For verbs of the II conjug., 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. (except those in <i>амъ</i> not preceded by a hissing letter). (See the paradigms 13, 14, 16, 18 and 20.)				

The third person of the plural ends in *амъ* (instead of *ятъ*) after the hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), and this for the verbs of the third branch of the II conj. (See paradigm 13).

2. The *preterit* in verbs of the I st and II conj. is formed from the infinitive by changing *тъ* into *лъ* (*fem.* ла, *neut.* ло; *plur.* ли). The inchoative verbs of the III conj. syncopate the termination *нулъ* into *ъ* (*fem.* ла, *neut.* ло; *plur.* ли), by suppressing the consonant л in the masculine, when no vowel immediately precedes; e. g. сохъ, вялъ (*fem.* сохла, вяла, *neut.* сохло, вяло), instead of сохнулъ, вянулъ, from сохнуть, *to dry*; вянуть, *to fade*. Occasionally the full form is used: e. g. мёрзнуть, *to freeze*, мёрзнулъ; but in the inchoative prepositional verbs, the preterit is almost always syncopated, and this sometimes happens also in the aspect perfect of unity; e. g. замёрзнуть, *to freeze*, замёрзъ, вздвигнуть, *to erect*, вздвигъ (instead of замёрзнулъ, вздвигнулъ).

The non-inchoative verbs, as also the perfect aspect of unity, retain the termination *нулъ*; e. g. тянулъ, двинулъ, from тянуть, *to draw*; двинуть, *to move once*. The verbs of the 2d branch of the III conj. also syncopate the termination of the preterit. (See the paradigms 22, 23, 24 and 25.)

3. The *imperative* ends in the second person of the singular in *и*, *ь*, *и* or *й*, and is formed from the second person of

the present (or from the future, in the perfect aspect of duration or of unity), by changing *еиь* or *иуь*:

a) into *ѹ*, if the accent is on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21, 22);

б) into *ѵ*, if the accent is not on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 13, 14, 17 and 24);

в) into *и*, if, without having the accent, the termination of the inf. is preceded by two or three consonants (paradigms 20 & 23);

г) into *ѹ*, if the inflection *еиь* or *иуь* of the second person is preceded by a vowel (paradigms 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 and 9). The verbs in *иуь* preceded by a vowel, and with the accent on the last syllable, also take the inflection *ѹ*, e. g. тайть, *to hide*; поить, *to water*; клеить, *to paste*; imper.: тай, пои, клеи.

The second person of the plural is formed by adding the syllable *те* to the inflection of the second person of the singular. The other persons have no peculiar inflection. The first person of the plural takes that of the future; e. g. будемъ учиться, *let us study*; пойдёмъ, *let us go*, and sometimes adding the syllable *те*, пойдёте. The third person in both numbers takes that of the present or the future, preceded by the conjunctions *пусть* or *да*, e. g. пусть говоритъ, *let him speak*; да здравствуетъ, *let him live*; да будутъ, *let them be*.

The second person singular of the imperative is sometimes used with the personal pronouns of the first and third person, in order to express the *conditional* mood; e. g. сдѣлай это я, *if I should do that*; сдѣлай это онъ, *if he were to do that*; instead of *если бы я* (or *онъ*) *это сдѣлалъ*. In the same manner the phrases: сохрани Богъ, *God preserve!* дай Богъ, *God grant!* take the place of the *optative* mood.

Rem. There are some regular verbs which deviate slightly from the general rules, undergoing a trifling change either in the 1st person of the pres., or in the imper., as we shall subsequently point out. We remark lastly that there is but one verb which has its imper. in *ѵ*; it is the irregular verb лечь, *to lie down*; imper.: лягъ, pl. лягте.

57.—Observing these different rules for the formation of the moods, tenses and persons, the active, neuter and pronominal regular Russian verbs are conjugated according to the 25 following paradigms.

Paradigms
of the con-
jugations of
regular
verbs.

PARADIGMS OF THE THREE CONJUGATIONS

PARADIGMS: BRANCHES: CONJUGATIONS: . . .		I. INFINITIVE.		II. INDICATIVE.					
				I. PRESENT.					
				Singular.			Plural.		
FIRST	1.	1.	дѣлать, to make.	дѣлаю,	дѣла-ешь,	етъ;	емъ.	ете,	ютъ.
		2.	толковать, to explain.	толкую,	толку-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		3.	воевать, to war	воюю,	вою-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		4.	жевать, to chew.	жую,	жу-ёшь,	ётъ;	ёмъ,	ёте,	ютъ.
		5.	гулять, to take a walk.	гуляю,	гуля-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		6.	сѣять, to sow.	сѣю,	сѣ-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
		7.	желтѣть, to grow yellow.	желтѣю,	желтѣ-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
SECOND	1.	8.	хвалить, to praise.	хваляю,	хваля-ишь,	ишь;	ишь,	ите,	ятъ.
		9.	строить, to build.	строю,	стро-ишь,	ишь;	ишь,	ите,	ятъ.
		10.	колоть, to sting.	колю,	кол-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
	2.	11.	любить, to love.	люблю,	люб-ишь,	ишь;	ишь,	ите,	ятъ.
		12.	дремать, to slumber.	дремлю,	дремл-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	ютъ.
	3.	13.	мучить, to torment.	мучу,	муч-ишь,	ишь;	ишь,	ите,	ятъ.
		14.	ладить, to tune.	лажу,	лад-ишь,	ишь;	ишь,	ите,	ятъ.
	4.	15.	вязать, to tie.	вяжу,	вяж-ешь,	етъ;	етъ,	ете,	утъ.
		16.	платить, to pay.	плачу,	плат-ишь,	ишь;	ишь,	ите,	ятъ.
	5.	17.	плакать, to weep.	плачу,	плач-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	утъ.
		18.	просить, to ask.	прошу,	прос-ишь,	ишь;	ишь,	ите,	ятъ.
	6.	19.	писать, to write.	пишу,	пиш-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	утъ.
		20.	чищать, to clean.	чищу,	чист-ишь,	ишь;	ишь,	ите,	ятъ.
	7.	21.	искать, to seek.	ищу,	ищ-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	утъ.
THIRD	1.	22.	тянуть, to draw.	тяну,	тян-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	утъ.
		23.	сохнуть, to dry.	сохну,	сохн-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	утъ.
		24.	вѣнуть, to fade.	вѣну,	вѣн-ешь,	етъ;	емъ,	ете,	утъ.
	2.	25.	тереть, to rub.	тру,	тр-ёшь,	ётъ;	ёмъ,	ёте,	утъ.

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the conjugations of regular verbs, the following rules are to be observed.

1. The first person of the present takes the accent of the infinitive, with the exception of the verbs in *овѣтъ* and *евѣтъ*, in which the last syllable is accented. These verbs transfer the accent on the penultima, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb; but if the syllable *ов* or *ев* belongs to the root of the verb, they preserve the accent on the last syllable; thus *толковать*, *воевать* (parad. 2 and 3) have in the present *толкую*, *воюю*; while *жевать* (parad. 4) has *жую*; and also *ковать*, *to forge*, *кую*; *плевать*, *to spit*, *плюю*. The other persons of the present preserve the accent of the first person, with the exception of several verbs of the II^d and III^d conjugation, accented on the last syllable, which transfer the accent on the penultima in the second and other persons of the singular and plural. (See the paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21 and 22.)

GATIONS OF REGULAR VERBS.

C A T I V E.

III. IMPERATIVE.

II. PRETERIT.				III. FUTURE.		2d pers.	
Singular.			Plural.			Sing.	Plur.
masc. neut. fem.			3 genders.				
я, ты, онъ (n. онѣ, f. онѣ)	дѣлалъ,	ало,	ала; . . .	мы, вы, онѣ (f. онѣ)	дѣлали.	дѣлай,	йте.
	толковалъ,	ало,	ала; . . .			толкуй,	ите.
	воевалъ,	ало,	ала; . . .			воюй,	ите.
	жевалъ,	ало,	ала; . . .			жуй,	ите.
	гулялъ,	яло,	яла; . . .			гуляй,	ите.
	сѣялъ,	яло,	яла; . . .			сѣй,	ите.
я, ты, онъ (n. онѣ, f. онѣ)	желтелъ,	ѣло,	ѣла; . . .	мы, вы, онѣ (f. онѣ)	желтели.	желтай,	ите.
	хвалилъ,	ило,	ила; . . .			хвали,	ите.
	строилъ,	ило,	ила; . . .			строй,	ите.
	колѣлъ,	ѣло,	ѣла; . . .			колѣ,	ите.
	любилъ,	ило,	ила; . . .			люби,	ите.
	дремалъ,	ало,	ала; . . .			дремли,	ите.
	мучилъ,	ило,	ила; . . .			мучь,	ите.
	ладилъ,	ило,	ила; . . .			ладь,	ите.
	вязалъ,	ало,	ала; . . .			вяжи,	ите.
	платилъ,	ило,	ила; . . .			плать,	ите.
я, ты, онъ (n. онѣ, f. онѣ)	плакалъ,	ало,	ала; . . .	мы, вы, онѣ (f. онѣ)	плакали.	плачь,	ите.
	просилъ,	ило,	ила; . . .			проси,	ите.
	писалъ,	ало,	ала; . . .			пиши,	ите.
	чистилъ,	ило,	ила; . . .			чисти,	ите.
	искалъ,	ало,	ала; . . .			ищи,	ите.
я, ты, онъ (n. онѣ, f. онѣ)	танулъ,	уло,	ула; . . .	мы, вы, онѣ (f. онѣ)	танули.	тяни,	ите.
	сохъ,	хло,	хла; . . .			сохни,	ите.
	взялъ,	яло,	яла; . . .			вянь,	ите.
	тёръ,	рло,	рла; . . .			три.	ите.

бѣду or стану (снѣ, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ) with the infinitive.

2. The preterit retains the accentuation of the infinitive, and that in all the inflections, excepted родить, to bring forth, pret. родилъ, f. родила, n. родило, pl. родили, and some verbs of the III conjugation, which, as well as the irregular verbs, follow the rules of adjectives in the apocopated termination, i. e. the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the feminine gender, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural, as we shall see later.

3. The accentuation of the imperative is above indicated in the formation of this mood.

4. The pronominal verbs preserve the accentuation of the active verbs; however some of these verbs transfer the accent to the reflected pronoun сѣ, as родилсѣ, he is born, заперсѣ, it shut itself up; but that happens only in the masculine gender; in the feminine and neuter, as well as in the plural, the accent is placed on the syllable which precedes the pronoun (родилась, заперлась, &c.). This transferring happens above all in the monosyllable verbs, as звалсѣ, взялсѣ, далсѣ, &c.

First conjugation.

According to the 1st paradigm (дѣлать) are conjugated verbs in *амь*, as well simple as prepositional (with the exception of those in *овать* and *евать*, which belong to the three following paradigms, and of several in *амь*, which are of the second conjugation). Such are:

Болтать, to shake, *pres.* болтаю.
 Вѣнчать, to crown, вѣнчаю.
 Дерзать, to dare, дерзаю.
 Думать, to think, думаю.
 Ласкать, to caress, ласкаю.
 Пытать, to assay, пытаю.
 Печатать, to print, печатаю.
 Работать, to work, работаю.
 Питать, to nourish, питаю.
 Нюхать, to smell, нюхаю.
 Терзать, to worry, терзаю.
 Умничать, to subtilize, умничаю.
 Ужасать, to terrify, ужасаю.

Уповать, to hope, *pres.* уповаю.
 Обожать, to adore, обожаю.
 Отвѣчать, to answer, отвѣчаю.
 Общѣать, to promise, общѣаю.
 Отдѣлывать, to finish, отдѣлываю.
 Усматривать, to perceive, усматриваю.
 Закрывать, to cover, закрываю.
 Надмевать, to render proud, надмеваю.
 Обуревать, to agitate, обуреваю.
 Отмщевать, to avenge, отмщеваю.
 Здорѳваться, to salute, здорѳваюсь.
 Касаться, to concern, касаюсь.
 Намѣрѣваться, to purpose, -ваюсь.

Also давать, to give, as the prepositional verbs узнавать, to know; доставать, to procure (and with other prepositions) and создавать, to build, which have in the present: даю, узнаю, достаю and создаю, and in the imperative: давай, узнавай, доставай and создавай. — Some prepositional verbs in *ывать*, e. g. показывать, to show; указывать, to indicate; помазывать, to anoint; исповѣдывать, to confess, belong also to the following branch, having the present tense in *ываю* and in *ую*: показываю and показую, помазываю and помазую, &c.

According to the 2nd paradigm (толковать) are conjugated verbs in *овать* (with the exception of *уповать* and *здорѳваться* which belong to the precedent paradigm), which have in the present *ую*, observing that those in *овать* accented on the last syllable transfer the accent to *у*, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb, but they preserve it on the last syllable, if the syllable *ов* belongs to the root of the verb. Such are:

Ворковать, to soo, *pres.* воркую.
 Торговать, to traffic, торгую.
 Баловать, to cocker, балую.
 Ковать, to forge, кую.
 Сновать, to warp, сную.
 Совать, to shove, сую.

Зимовать, to winter, *pres.* зимую.
 Именовать, to name, именую.
 Цѣловать, to kiss, цѣлую.
 Рисовать, to draw, рисую.
 Образовывать, to form, образую.
 Радовать, to rejoice, радую.

Трѣбовать, to require, *pres.* трѣбую. Привѣтствовать, to welcome, *pres.*
 Чувствовать, to feel, чувствую. привѣтствую.
 Совѣтовать, to counsel, совѣтую. Повиноваться, to obey, повинуюсь.
 Миловать, to have pity, милую.

According to the 3d paradigm (воевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* (with the exception of those in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant, which belong to the following paradigm, and of *надмевать*, *обуреывать*, *отмицевать* and *напиреваться*, which belong to the first paradigm), which have in the present *юю*, with the same observation relatively to the tonic accent as for verbs in *овать*. Such are:

Горевать, to grieve, *pres.* горюю. Клевать, to peck, *pres.* кляю.
 Дневать, to pass the day, дняю. Плевать, to spit, плюю.
 Утренневать, to pass the morning. Блевать, to vomit, блюю.
 Малевать, to paint, маляю. [-нюю. Пеклевать, to bolt, пекляю.

According to the 4th paradigm (жевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), which have in the present *юю* (instead of *юю*); such are:

Врачевать, to cure, *pres.* врачую. Тушевать, to wash a drawing, *pres.*
 Кочевать, to nomadize, кочую. тушую.
 Ночевать, to pass the night, ночую. Хвощевать, to rub with horse-tail,
 Межевать, to survey, межую. хвощую.
 Бушевать, to howl, бушую. Пощевать, to regale, пощую.

This last verb is also written *пощивать*, and then it belongs to the first branch, having in the present: *пощиваю*.

According to the 5th paradigm (гулять) are conjugated all the verbs in *ать* preceded by a consonant, as well simple as prepositional, and also four simple verbs in *ать* preceded by a vowel, and some prepositional verbs in *оать*, in which *ать* is contracted from *ивать*. These verbs have the present in *аю*. Such are:

Валать, to roll, *pres.* валяю. Утолять, to quench, *pres.* утоляю.
 Вонять, to stink, воняю. Извинять, to excuse, извиняю.
 Кашлять, to cough, кашляю. Повѣрять, to verify, повѣряю.
 Мѣнять, to change, мѣняю. Утомлять, to fatigue, утомляю.
 Козырять, to trump, козыряю. Ваять, to sculpture, ваяю.
 Кривлять, to contort, кривляю. Зіять, to gape, зіяю.
 Терять, to lose, теряю. Паять, to solder, паяю.
 Стрѣлять, to shoot, стрѣляю. Сіять, to shine, сіяю.
 Являть, to show, являю. Устройать, to arrange, устраюю.
 Кланяться, to salute, кланяюсь. Удвоять, to double, удваюю.

According to the 6th paradigm (сѣять) are conjugated verbs in *ять* preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those which belong to the precedent paradigm, and of *стоять* and *бояться*, which belong to the first branch of the II^d conjugation). They have the present in *ю*; such are:

Бѣать, to speak, *pres.* бѣю.

Блѣять, to bleat, блѣю.

Вопіять, to cry, вопію.

Вѣять, to blow, вѣю.

Граять, to croak, граю.

Лелѣять, to cocker, лелѣю.

Таять, to thaw, *pres.* таю.

Чаять, to hope, чаю.

Чуять, to hear, чую.

Каяться, to do penance, каюсь.

Маяться, to languish, маюсь.

Смѣяться, to laugh, смѣюсь.

According to the 7th paradigm (желтѣть) are conjugated the inchoative and some other verbs in *ѣть*, which have the present in *ю*, (the non-inchoative in *ѣть* belong to the various branches of the second conjugation). Such are:

Блѣѣть, to grow white, *pres.* блѣю.

Голубѣть, to become azure, голубѣю.

Соловѣть, to grow light bay, соловѣю.

Рябѣть, to become freckled, рябѣю.

Краснѣть, to grow red, краснѣю.

Владѣть, to possess, владѣю.

Глазѣть, to gaze, глазѣю.

Говѣть, to keep fast, говѣю.

Долѣть, to overcome, долѣю.

Жалѣть, to have pity, жалѣю.

Синѣть, to grow blue, синѣю.

Сѣдѣть, to grow grey, сѣдѣю.

Рыжѣть, to grow rufous, *pres.* рыжѣю.

Грубѣть, to grow harsh, грубѣю.

Чернѣть, to grow black, чернѣю.

Потѣть, to sweat, потѣю.

Пламенѣть, to flame, пламенѣю.

Колѣть, to starve, колѣю.

Коснѣть, to linger, коснѣю.

Печатлѣть, to impress, печатлѣю.

Имѣть, to have, имѣю.

Умѣть, to know, умѣю.

Радѣть, to take care, радѣю.

Болѣть, to ache, болѣю.

The verb *болѣть* belongs also to the first branch of the II^d conjugation, having in the present болѣю and болѣю, болѣешь and болѣишь, &c. — The prepositional verb *выздоровѣть*, to recover (perfect aspect of *выздораивливать*), belongs also to the second branch of the II^d conjugation, having in the future *выздоровѣю* and *выздоровѣю*, but only in the first person, the others being: *выздоровѣешь*, *еть*, &c.

Second
conjugation.

According to the 8th paradigm (хвалѣть) are conjugated verbs in *ѣть* preceded by a palatal consonant (л, н, р), and also by another consonant, as those, non-inchoative, in *лѣть*, *нѣть*, *рѣть*, observing that several verbs of the second conjugation, accented in the infinitive and in the first person of the present on the last syllable, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. Such are:

Бранить, to scold, <i>pres.</i> браню, бранишь.	Коймить, to edge, <i>pres.</i> коймю, -ишь.
Веселить, to divert, веселю, веселишь.	Клеймить, to stamp, клеймю, -ишь.
Винить, to accuse, виню, винишь.	Гудить, to fiddle, гудю, гудишь.
Вѣрить, to believe, вѣрю, вѣришь.	Дудить, to pipe, дудю, дудишь.
Говорить, to speak, говорю, говоришь.	Мерзять, to abhor, мерзю, мерзишь.
Смолить, to pitch, смолю, смолишь.	Тузить, to cuff, тузю, тузишь.
Дѣлить, to divide, дѣлю, дѣлишь.	Кудесить, to juggle, кудесю, кудесишь.
Скоблить, to scrape, скоблю, скоблишь.	Чудесить, to behave oddly, чудесю, чудесишь.
Дразнить, to provoke, дразню, дразнишь.	Велѣть, to order, велю, велѣшь.
Хоронить, to hide, хороню, хоронишь.	Горѣть, to burn, горю, горѣшь.
Кури́ть, to smoke, ку́рю, ку́ришь.	Звенѣть, to sound, звеню, звенѣшь.
Варить, to boil, варию, варишь.	Смотрѣть, to look, смотрю, смотришь.

And also *мы́слить*, to think, which changes *c* into *ш* in the first person of the present: *мы́шлю*, *мы́слишь*, &c.: *imperative*: *мы́сли*; and the prepositional verb *изостри́ть*, to sharpen (perfect aspect of *изощра́ть*), which changes *ст* into *щ* in the first person of the future: *изощру́*, *изостри́шь*, &c.

According to the 9th paradigm (*стро́ить*) are conjugated verbs in *ить* preceded by a vowel, as the two simple verbs in *оить*, observing that the verbs in *ить* of this branch, accented on the last syllable, have the imperative in *и́*. Such are:

Двойть, to double, <i>pres.</i> двою; <i>imp.</i> двой.	Сто́ять, to cost, <i>pres.</i> стою; <i>imp.</i> стой.
Доить, to milk, дою; дои́.	Сво́ить, to appropriate, свою; свой.
Клейть, to glue, клею; клеи́.	Покóить, to give repose, покóю; покóи.
Поить, to give to drink, пою; пои́.	Ро́иться, to swarm, ро́ю; ро́йся.
Кроить, to cut, крою; крои́.	Ста́иться, to fly in flocks, ста́юсь; ста́йся.
Струить, to pour, струю; струи́.	Бо́яться, to fear, бо́юсь; бо́йся.
Тайть, to hide, таю; таи́.	Стоа́ть, to stand, стоа́ю; стоа́й.

According to the 10th paradigm (*колóть*) are conjugated verbs in *оть*, as two verbs in *ать*; these are:

Борóть, to vanquish, <i>pres.</i> борю, бóрешь.	Порóть, to rip, <i>pres.</i> порю, пóрешь.
Борóться, to wrestle, борю́сь, бó- [решься.]	Глаго́латъ, to say, глаго́лю, глаго́- лешь.
Полóть, to weed, полю, пóлешь.	Ора́ть, to plough, орю, óрешь.

And also *молóть*, to grind, which has in the present: *мелю́*, *мелѣшь*, &c. and in the imperative *мели́* (instead of *молю́*, *мóлешь*, *молѣ*, not to be confounded with *молю́*, *мо́лишь*,

МОЛІ, from МОЛІТЬ, *to pray*). — The verb ОРАТЬ in the sense of *to cry* belongs to the third conjugation.

According to the 11th paradigm (ЛЮБИТЬ) are conjugated verbs in *имѣ* preceded by a labial consonant (б, в, м, п, ф), as the non-inchoatives in *бѣть, мѣть, пѣть*, which insert the consonant *л* in the first person of the present (with the exception of *клеѣмѣть* and *коѣмѣть*, which belong to the first branch of the II^d conjugation, of *имѣть* and *ѹмѣть*, which belong to the 4th branch of the Ist conjugation, and of *шубѣть*, which belongs to the first branch of the III^d conjugation). Such are:

Рубѣть, to hew, *pres.* рублю, рубишь.

Знобѣть, to chill, зноблю, знобишь.

Грубѣть, to be saucy, грублю, грубѣшь.

Ловѣть, to catch, ловлю, ловишь.

Готовѣть, to prepare, готовлю, готовишь.

Дымѣть, to smoke, дымлю, дымишь.

Кормѣть, to nourish, кормлю, кормишь.

Топѣть, to heat, топлю, топишь.

Лѣпѣть, to mould, лѣплю, лѣпишь.

Граѣть, to rule, граблю, граѣшь.

Траѣть, to hit, траплю, траѣшь.

Нравѣться, to please, нравлюсь, нравѣшься.

Рѣзвѣться, to sport, *pres.* рѣзвлюсь, рѣзвишься.

Скорбѣть, to sorrow, скорблю, рбишь.

Свербѣть, to itch, сверблю, свербишь.

Гремѣть, to thunder, гремлю, гремишь.

Шумѣть, to racket, шумлю, шумишь.

Кипѣть, to boil, киплю, кипишь.

Корпѣть, to work, корплю, корпишь.

Сопѣть, to wheeze, соплю, сопишь.

Скрипѣть, to creak, скриплю, скрипишь.

Терпѣть, to suffer, терплю, терпишь.

Храпѣть, to snore, храплю, храпишь.

Хрипѣть, to croak, хриплю, хрипишь.

Шипѣть, to hiss, шиплю, шипишь.

And also the prepositional verb| умертвѣть, *to put to death* (perfect aspect of *умерщвлять*), which changes *т* into *ц* in the first person of the future: умерщвлю, умертвишь, &c.

According to the 12th paradigm (ДРЕМАТЬ) are conjugated verbs in *бать, мать, пать*, which insert also the consonant *л* in the first person of the present, and retain it in the other persons as in all the inflections derivated from this first person. These are:

Зыбѣть, to wave, *pres.* зыблю, зыблешь.

Колебѣть, to shake, колеблю, колѣблешь.

Клепѣть, to impute, клеплю, клеплешь.

Трепѣть, to scutch, треплю, трѣплешь.

Щепѣть, to chip, щеплю, щѣплешь.

Щипѣть, to pinch, щиплю, щѣплешь.

Сыпѣть, to strew, сыплю, сыплешь (*imper.* сыпь, instead of *сыль*).

And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation. [зобѣю.

Зобѣть, to peck up, *pres.* зоблю and

Капѣть, to drop, каплю and капаю.

Крапѣть, to dash, краплю and крапаю.

Хромѣть, to be lame, хромлю and

хромаю.

And also *имѣть*, to take, which now is used only with a preposition, as *принимѣть*, to receive, *pres. пріёмлю* and *принимаяю*, and with other prepositions.

According to the 13th paradigm (*мѣнить*) are conjugated verbs in *имѣть* and *амѣть* with a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), as one verb in *шѣть* (with the exception of the verbs in *амѣть*, which belong in the first conjugation). Such are:

Нѣжить, to nurse, <i>pres. нѣжу</i> , нѣ- жишь. [дружѣшь.	Сушить, to dry, <i>pres. сушу</i> , сушишь.
Дружить, to make friends, дружѣу,	Лежать, to lie, лежѣу, лежишь.
Корчить, to shrivel, корчѣу, корчишь.	Держать, to hold, держѣу, держишь.
Страшить, to frighten, страшѣу, стра- шишь.	Кричать, to cry, кричѣу, кричишь.
Вощить, to wax, вощѣу, вощишь.	Молчать, to be silent, молчѣу, молчишь.
Лощить, to gloss, лощѣу, лощишь.	Стучать, to knock, стучѣу, стучишь.
Служить, to serve, служѣу, служишь.	Пышать, to burn, пышѣу, пышишь.
Лечить, to cure, лечѣу, лечишь.	Дышать, to breathe, дышѣу, дышишь.
Учить, to teach, учѣу, учишь.	Пяцать, to pipe, пещѣу, пещишь.
	Трещать, to burst, трещѣу, трещишь.
	Кнѣжить, to swarm, кнѣшѣу, кнѣшишь.

According to the 14th paradigm (*лѣдить*) are conjugated verbs in *дѣть* and *зѣть*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *дѣть* (with the exception of *гудѣть*, *дудѣть*, *мерзѣть*, *тузѣть* and some others, which belong to the first branch of this second conjugation); these verbs change *ѣ* and *зѣ* into *ю* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *дѣть* have retained the Slavonian change of *ѣ* into *юдѣ* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Вредѣть, to hurt, <i>pres. врежѣу</i> , вре- дишь.	Узѣть, to narrow, <i>pres. уажѣу</i> , уажишь.
Гладѣть, to even, гладѣу, гладѣишь.	Морозѣть, to freeze, морозѣу, морозѣишь.
Щадѣть, to spare, щадѣу, щадѣишь.	Возѣть, to carry, вожѣу, возѣишь.
Родѣть, to bring forth, рождѣу, родишь.	Видѣть, to see, виждѣу, (<i>impr.</i> видѣ and виждѣ).
Лудѣть, to tin, лудѣу, лудѣишь.	Глядѣть, to look, гляждѣу, гляждѣишь.
Нудѣть, to compel, нудѣу, нудѣишь.	Сидѣть, to sit, снждѣу, сидѣишь.
Будѣть, to waken, бужѣу, будѣишь.	Смердѣть, to stink, смерждѣу, смердѣишь.
Водѣть, to lead, вожѣу, водѣишь.	Убѣдѣть, to persuade, <i>fut.</i> убѣждѣу, убѣждѣишь.
Сердѣть, to anger, серждѣу, сердѣишь.	Наградѣть, to reward, награждѣу, награждѣишь.
Судѣть, to judge, сужѣу, судѣишь.	Возбудѣть, to excite, возбуждѣу, возбуждѣишь. [упредѣишь.
Ходѣть, to go, хожѣу, ходѣишь.	Упредѣть, to prevent, упреждѣу, упреждѣишь.
Грузѣть, to lade, грузѣу, грузѣишь.	
Близѣть, to approach, ближдѣу, бли- зишь.	
Грозѣть, to menace, грождѣу, грозѣишь.	
Низѣть, to lower, ннждѣу, низѣишь.	

According to the 15th paradigm (вѣзѣть) are conjugated some verbs in *зѣть*, *гѣть* and *дѣть*, which change *з*, *г* and *д* into *ж* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed from this tense. These are:

Мѣзѣть, to anoint, *pres.* мѣжу, мѣжешь.

Рѣзѣть, to cut, рѣжу, рѣжешь.

Кѣзѣть, to show, кѣжу, кѣжешь.

Кѣзѣться, to seem, кѣжусь, кѣжешься.

Нѣзѣть, to thread, нѣжу, нѣжешь.

Лѣзѣть, to lick, лѣжу, лѣжешь.

Брызѣть, to splash, брызжу, брызжешь.

Глѣдѣть, to gnaw, *pres.* гложу, глѣдешь.

And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st br. of 1st. conjug.

Двѣгѣть, to move, двѣжу and двѣгаю.

Тягѣть, to be at law, тяжусь and тяжаюсь.

Стругѣть, to plane, стружу and строгаю (instead of *стружаю*).

According to the 16th paradigm (плѣтитъ) are conjugated verbs in *мѣть*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *мѣть* (with the exception of some verbs in *мѣть* which belong to the 20th paradigm), which change *м* into *ч* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Винѣтитъ, to screw, *pres.* винчу, винтитъ.

Золѣтитъ, to gild, золочу, золотитъ.

Забѣтитъ, to busy, забѣчу, забѣтитъ.

Порѣтитъ, to spoil, порѣчу, порѣтитъ.

Мутѣтитъ, to muddy, мутчу, мутитъ.

Круѣтитъ, to twist, кручу, крутитъ.

Мѣтитъ, to aim, мѣчу, мѣтитъ.

Трѣтитъ, to spend, трѣчу, трѣтитъ.

Кѣтитъ, to roll, *pres.* качу, кѣтитъ.

Молѣтитъ, to thrash, молочу, молотитъ.

Свѣтитъ, to light, свѣчу, свѣтитъ.

Шутѣтитъ, to joke, шучу, шутитъ.

Колѣтитъ, to knock, колочу, колѣтитъ.

Верѣтитъ, to turn, верчу, вертитъ.

Летѣтитъ, to fly, летчу, летитъ.

Пыхѣтитъ, to puff, пыхчу, пыхтитъ.

According to the 17th paradigm (плѣкѣть) are conjugated several verbs in *мѣть* and *кѣть*, which change *м* and *к* into *ч* for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed from this tense. Such are.

Прѣтѣть, to hide, *pres.* прѣчу, прѣчешь [бормѣчешь.

Бормѣтѣть, to murmur, бормочу, бормѣчешь.

Лепѣтѣть, to chatter, лепечу, лепѣчешь.

Топѣтѣть, to tread town, топчу, топчешь. [пѣчешь.

Хлопотѣть, to bustle, хлопочу, хлопѣчешь.

Хохотѣть, to laugh aloud, хохочу, хохѣчешь.

Шепѣтѣть, to whisper, шепчу, шепчешь.

Щекотѣть, to tickle, щекочу, кѣчешь.

Кудѣхѣть, to cackle, *pres.* кудѣхчу, кудѣхчешь.

Клѣкѣть, to call, клѣчу, клѣчешь.

Скакѣть, to leap, скачу, скачешь.

Тѣкѣть, to thirst, тѣчу, тѣчешь.

And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.

Алкѣть, to long, алчу and алкаю.

Икѣть, to hiccup, ичу and икаю.

Хнѣкѣть, to sob, хнѣчу and хнѣкаю.

Метѣть, to cast, мечу and метаю.

According to the 18th paradigm (просить) are conjugated verbs in *ситъ* (with the exception of *кудѣситъ* and *чудѣситъ* which belong to the first branch of the II d conjugation), and also one non-inchoative in *сѣтъ*, which change *с* into *ш* in the first person of the present. Such are:

Вѣсѣтъ, to black, <i>pres.</i> вѣкшу, вѣксѣтъ.	Трусѣтъ, to be afraid, <i>pres.</i> трушу, трусѣтъ.
Вѣситъ, to weigh, вѣшу, вѣсѣтъ.	Росѣтъ, to bedew, росу, росѣтъ.
Квасѣтъ, to leaven, квасу, квасѣтъ.	Гасѣтъ, to put out, гашу, гасѣтъ.
Красѣтъ, to colour, красу, красѣтъ.	Мѣситъ, to knead, мѣшу, мѣсѣтъ.
Косѣтъ, to mow, кошу, косѣтъ.	Носѣтъ, to bear, носу, носѣтъ.
Бѣситъ, to madden, бѣшу, бѣсѣтъ.	Висѣтъ, to hang, вѣшу, висѣтъ.

According to the 19th paradigm (писать) are conjugated some verbs in *сѣтъ* and *хѣтъ*, which change *с* and *х* into *ш* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

Плясѣтъ, to dance, <i>pres.</i> пляшу, плясѣтъ.	And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
Поисѣтъ, to gird, поѣшу, поѣсѣтъ.	Колыхѣтъ, to swing, <i>pres.</i> колышу and колыхаю.
Тесѣтъ, to hew, тѣшу, тѣсѣтъ.	Махѣтъ, to fan, машу, махѣтъ and махаю.
Чесѣтъ, to comb, чѣшу, чѣсѣтъ.	
Брѣхѣтъ, to yell, брѣшу, брѣсѣтъ.	
Пахѣтъ, to plough, пашу, пахѣтъ.	

According to the 20th paradigm (чистить) are conjugated verbs in *ситъ* and the non-inchoatives in *сѣтъ*, which change *с* into *ш* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *титъ*, which have retained the Slavonian change of *т* into *ш*, belong also to this paradigm. Such are:

Груститъ, to grieve, <i>pres.</i> грущу, груститъ.	Претитъ, to forbid, <i>pres.</i> прещу, претитъ.
Гоститъ, to visit, гощу, гоститъ.	Святитъ, to sanctify, свѣщу, святитъ.
Креститъ, to christen, крещу, креститъ.	Сытитъ, to satiate, сыщу, сытитъ.
Моститъ, to floor, мошу, моститъ.	Хититъ, to ravish, хещу, хититъ.
Честитъ, to treat, чѣщу, честитъ.	Посѣтитъ, to visit, <i>fut.</i> посещу, посѣтитъ.
Блестѣтъ, to shine, блещу, блестѣтъ.	Укротитъ, to appease, укрошу, укротитъ.
Свистѣтъ, to whistle, свѣщу, свистѣтъ.	Сократитъ, to shorten, сокращу, сократитъ.
Хруститъ, to crunch, хрущу, -ститъ.	Просвѣтитъ, to enlighten, просвѣщу, просвѣтитъ.
Проститъ, to pardon, <i>fut.</i> прощу, проститъ.	Возвратитъ, to return, возвращу, возвратитъ.
Пуститъ, to let go, <i>fut.</i> пущу, пуститъ.	
Богатитъ, to enrich, <i>pres.</i> богашу, богатитъ.	

The verbs *простѣть*, *пустѣть*, *посѣть* and following, are the perfect aspects of *прошѣть*, *пущѣть*, *посѣщѣть*, *укрошѣть*, *сокращѣть*, *просѣщѣть*, *возвращѣть*; thus the inflections *прошѣу*, *пущѣу*, *посѣщѣу*, *укрошѣу*, &c., are future tenses.

According to the 21st paradigm (*искѣть*) are conjugated some verbs in *скѣть* and *стѣть*, as well as four verbs in *тѣть*, which change *ск* and *ст*, or *т*, into *щ* for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

Плескѣть, to splash, <i>pres.</i> плещѣу, плещѣшь.	Скрежетѣть, to gnash, <i>pres.</i> скрежѣщѣу, скрежѣщѣшь.
Рыскѣть, to run, <i>pres.</i> рѣщѣу, рѣщѣшь.	Трепетѣть, to tremble, <i>pres.</i> трепещѣу, трепещѣшь.
Полоскѣть, to rinse, <i>pres.</i> полощѣу, полощѣшь.	And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation.
Свистѣть, to whistle, <i>pres.</i> свѣщѣу, свѣщѣшь.	Блестѣть, shine, <i>pres.</i> блещѣу, блещѣшь and блѣстѣю.
Хлестѣть, to lash, <i>pres.</i> хлещѣу, хлещѣшь.	Прѣскѣть, to sprinkle, <i>pres.</i> прѣщѣу, прѣщѣшь.
Хвостѣть, to brush, <i>pres.</i> хвощѣу, хвощѣшь.	
Клеветѣть, to slander, <i>pres.</i> клеветѣщѣу, клеветѣщѣшь.	
Роптѣть, to murmur, <i>pres.</i> ропщѣу, ропщѣшь.	

Third conjugation.

According to the 22d paradigm (*тянѣть*) are conjugated verbs in *нѣть*, as well as four verbs in *аѣть* and one in *ѣть*, which have in the present *ѣ*, observing that some of these verbs, accented on the last syllable in the first person of the present, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. The perfect aspect of unity belongs also to this paradigm, but the form *нѣ* of these verbs is a future tense. Such are:

Тонѣть, to sink, <i>pres.</i> тонѣу, тонѣшь.	Кѣнуть, to cast, <i>fut.</i> кѣну, кѣнешь.
Рѣхнѣться, to be crazed, <i>pres.</i> рѣхнѣсь, рѣхнѣшься.	Вернѣть, to turn, <i>pres.</i> вернѣу, вернѣшь.
Жѣждать, to desire, <i>pres.</i> жѣждѣу, жѣждѣшь.	Свѣснѣть, to whistle, <i>pres.</i> свѣснѣу, свѣснѣшь.
Орѣть, to cry, <i>pres.</i> орѣу, орѣшь.	Грѣянуть, to thunder, <i>pres.</i> грѣяну, грѣянешь.
Сосѣть, to suck, <i>pres.</i> сосѣу, сосѣшь.	Глянѣть, to look, <i>pres.</i> глянѣу, глянѣшь.
Стонѣть, to groan, <i>pres.</i> стонѣу, стонѣшь.	Двѣнѣть, to move, <i>pres.</i> двѣну, двѣнешь.
Рѣвѣть, to roar, <i>pres.</i> рѣвѣу, рѣвѣшь.	Обманѣть, to cheat, <i>pres.</i> обманѣу, обманѣшь.

The verb *стонѣть* belongs also to the first branch of the 1st conjugation, having in the present: *стонѣу*, *стонѣшь*, and *стонѣю*, *стонѣешь*, &c. The verb *орѣть*, in the sense of *to plough*, belongs to the first branch of the IIId conjugation.

According to the 23d and 24th paradigms (сѡхнѹть and вѣнѹть) are conjugated the inchoative verbs in *нѹтъ*, which in the preterit syncopate the termination *нѹлѡ* in *ѡ* if this termination is preceded by a consonant, and in *лѡ* if it is preceded by a vowel (neut. *лѡ*, fem. *ла*). Such are:

Блѣкнѹть, to fade, *pret.* блѣкѡ, клѡ, кла. Пахнѹть, to smell, *pret.* пахѡ, хлѡ, хла.
 Зѣбнѹть, to freeze, зѣбѡ, блѡ, бла. Мокнѹть, to grow wet, мокѡ, клѡ, кла.
 Кѣснѹть, to turn sour, кѣсѡ, слѡ, сла. Вѣзнѹть, to sink in, вѣзѡ, злѡ, зла.
 Мѣрзнѹть, to freeze, мѣрзѡ, злѡ, зла. Гѣснѹть, to go out, гѣсѡ, слѡ, сла.
 Гибнѹть, to perish, гибѡ, блѡ, бла. Тѣхнѹть, to grow still, тѣхѡ, хлѡ, хла.
 Дѡхнѹть, to die, дохѡ, хлѡ, хла. Стѣхнѹть, to cool, стѣхѡ, лѡ, ла.

And also the prepositional verb ушибѣть, *to contuse* (and with other prepositions, perfect aspect of *ушибѣать*), which has in the future ушибѹ, ушибѣшь, and in the preterit ушибѡ, ушибла, &c.

According to the 25th paradigm (мерѣть) are conjugated verbs in *ерѣтъ*, which have in the present *ру*, and which syncopate also the preterit, observing that *мерѣтъ* and *перѣтъ* transfer in the feminine gender of the preterit the accent to the last syllable. These are:

Мерѣтъ, to die, *pres.* мру, мрѣшь; *pret.* мѣрѡ, мерла, рлѡ; рли.

Перѣтъ, to press, — прѹ, прѣшь; — пѣрѡ, перла, рлѡ; рли.

And also the verb *стерѣтъ*, *pres.* стру, стрѣшь; *pret.* стѣрѡ, рлѡ, which now is used only with a preposition, as: простѣрѣтъ, распростѣрѣтъ, *to extend*.

58.—The irregular verbs of the Russian language are divided into three classes: 1) the monosyllabic verbs in *тъ* preceded by a vowel; 2) some dissyllabic verbs in *тъ*, which in some inflections do not follow the general rules of the conjugation, and 3) the verbs with an irregular termination (in *зтъ*, *стъ*, *чтъ*, *мѹ* and *шѹ*), as is seen in the following table. Irregular verbs.

Among the monosyllabic verbs there are some which are regular and conjugated according to the paradigms of conjugations. These are:

(See page 142.)

CONJUGATION OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

138

RUSSIAN GRAMMAR.

I. INFINITIVE.		II. INDICATIVE.		III. IMPERATIVE.		Passive participle.
1. Imperfect (or perfect) aspect.	2. Iterative aspect.	1. Present (or Future).	2. Preterit.	2d pers.	Full termination.	
		Singular.	Plural.	Sing.	Plur.	

I. MONOSYLLABIC VERBS.

Брить, to shave . . .	бравать	брѣю, брѣ	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	брилѣ, ѣла, ло; ли	брий, ѣте .	бритый.
Дуть, to blow . . .	дувать	дую, ду	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	дулѣ, ѣла, ло; ли	дуй, ѣте .	дутый.
Утъ (обуть), to put shoes .	уаать	ую, у	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	ула, . . .	уй, ѣте .	утый.
Пѣть, to sing . . .	пѣвать	пою, по	пощѣ, ѣтѣ; ѣмѣ, ете, ютѣ	пѣлѣ, ѣла, ло; ли	пой, ѣте .	пѣтый.
Вѣть, to howl . . .	—	вѣю, вѣ	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	вѣлѣ, ѣла, ло; ли	вой, ѣте .	—
Крывать, to cover . . .	крывать	крою, кро	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	крьлѣ, . . .	крой, ѣте .	крытый.
Мыть, to wash . . .	мывать	мою, мо	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	мылѣ, . . .	мой, ѣте .	мытый.
Ныть, to grieve . . .	нывать	ною, но	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	нылѣ, . . .	пой, ѣте .	—
Рыть, to dig . . .	рывать	рою, ро	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	рылѣ, . . .	рой, ѣте .	рытый.
Гнить, to putrefy . . .	гнивать	гнию, гни	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	гнилѣ, ѣла, ло; ли	гний, ѣте .	—
Бить, to beat . . .	бивать	бую, бѣ	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	билѣ, . . .	бей, ѣте .	битый.
Шить, to sew . . .	шивать	шью, шѣ	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	шилѣ, . . .	шей, ѣте .	шитый.
Вить, to twine . . .	вивать	вую, вѣ	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	вилѣ, ѣла, ло; ли	вей, ѣте .	витый.
Лить, to pour . . .	ливать	лью, ль	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	лилѣ, . . .	лей, ѣте .	литой.
Пить, to drink . . .	пивать	пью, пѣ	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	пилѣ, . . .	пей, ѣте .	питый.
Чить (почить), to repose .	—	чую, чѣ	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	чилѣ, . . .	чѣй, ѣте .	—
Жить, to live . . .	живать	живу, жив	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	жилѣ, . . .	живѣй, ѣте .	(въ) житый.
Плыть, to navigate . . .	плывать	плыву, плыв	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	плылѣ, ѣла, ло; ли	плывѣй, ѣте .	—
Слѣть, to be reputed . . .	слѣвать	слѣву, слѣв	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	слѣлѣ, . . .	слѣвѣй, ѣте .	—
Стѣть, to grow cold . . .	стывать	стыну, стѣн	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	стылѣ, ѣла, ло; ли	стынѣй, ѣте .	—
Здѣть, to build . . .	здавать	зѣжду, зѣжд	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	зѣлѣ, ѣла, ло; ли	имѣй, ѣте .	зѣтый.
Ять (взять), to take . . .	—	имѣ	снѣ, сѣ; емѣ, ете, ютѣ	зѣлѣ, ѣла, ло; ли	зѣждѣй, ѣте .	здѣтый.

Возвѣщая

Брать, to take . . .	бирать	беру́, бер	бралъ . . .	бері́, іте	бранный.
Драть, to tear . . .	дирать	деру́, дер	дралъ . . .	дері́, іте	дранный
Звать, to call . . .	зывать	зову́, зов	звалъ . . .	зові́, іте	званный.
Врать, to babble . . .	вырять	вру́, вр	вралъ . . .	ври́, іте	—
Жрать, to devour . . .	жирать	жру́, жр	жралъ . . .	жри́, іте	(по) жранный.
Ждать, to await . . .	жидать	жду́, жд	ждалъ . . .	жди́, іте	жданый.
Рвать, to pluck . . .	рывать	рву́, рв	рвалъ . . .	рви́, іте	рванный.
Ржать, to neigh . . .	—	ржу́, рж	ржалъ . . .	ржи́, іте	—
Жать, to press . . .	жнать	жну́, жн	жалъ . . .	жми́, іте	жатый.
Жать, to mow . . .	жнать	жну́, жн	жалъ . . .	жни́, іте	жатый.
Мять, to knead . . .	мнать	мну́, мн	мялъ . . .	пни́, іте	мятый.
Прать (попирать), to trample	пирать	пру́, пр	пралъ . . .	при́, іте	праный.
Пять (распять), to stretch	пикать	пику́, пи	пикалъ . . .	пики́, іте	пиктый.
Чать (начать), to begin . . .	чинать	чину́, чн	чалъ . . .	чини́, іте	чатый.
Слатъ, to send . . .	сылать	шлю́, шлѣню́	слагъ . . .	шли́, іте	сланный.
Слатъ, to spread . . .	стилатъ	сте́лю, сте́лю	сталаъ . . .	стели́, іте	стланный.
Стать, <i>perf. asp.</i> to become	—	ста́ну, ста́н	сталъ . . .	стані́, бге	—
Дать, <i>perf. asp.</i> to put . . .	—	да́ю, да́ю	даъ . . .	даю́, бге	давый.
Дать, <i>perf. asp.</i> to give . . .	—	да́ю, да́ю	даъ . . .	дай́, іте	данный.
Лгать, to tell lies . . .	лгать	лгу́, лж	лгалъ . . .	лги́, іте	(вы) лганный.
Ткать, to weave . . .	тыкать	тку́, тк	ткалъ . . .	тки́, іте	тканный.
Скатъ, to twist . . .	—	ску́, сч	скалъ . . .	ски́, іте	сканный.
Гнать, to drive . . .	—	гоню́, гоню́	гналъ . . .	гоні́, іте	гнанный.
Спать, to sleep . . .	сыпать	сплю́, сп	спалъ . . .	спи́, іте	(за) спанный.
Чтить, to honour . . .	читать	чу́, чт	читалъ . . .	чти́, іте	чтбнный.
Быть, <i>perf. asp.</i> to be . . .	—	бѣю́, бѣю́	былъ . . .	буду́, бге	(за) быйый.

2. DISSYLLABIC VERBS.

Ѣхать, to ride . . .	—	ѣху́, ѣдѣю́	ѣхъ . . .	ѣхъ, ете	у́ть	ѣхалъ . . .	(поѣзжай, іте)
Бѣжать, to run . . .	—	бѣгу́, бѣжю́	бѣгъ . . .	бѣгъ, іте	бѣгѣю́	бѣжалъ . . .	бѣги́, іте
Хотѣть, to will . . .	—	хочу́, хочѣю́	хотѣъ . . .	хотѣъ, іте	хотѣю́	хотѣлъ . . .	хоти́, іте

I. INFINITIVE.			II. INDICATIVE.			III. IMPERATIVE.			Passive participle.
1. Imperfect (or perfect) aspect.		2. Iterative aspect.	1. Present (or future).		2. Preterit.	2d pers.		Full termination.	
			Singular.	Plural.	Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.	
3. VERBS WITH AN IRREGULAR TERMINATION.									
Везти́, to carry	—	везу́, везёшь, везётъ, везёмъ, везёте, везутъ, везутъ.	везу́, везёшь, везётъ, везёмъ, везёте, везутъ, везутъ.	везутъ, везутъ, везутъ, везутъ, везутъ, везутъ.	вёзъ, вёзъ, вёзъ, вёзъ, вёзъ, вёзъ.	вёзъ, вёзъ, вёзъ, вёзъ, вёзъ, вёзъ.	вези́, вези́, вези́, вези́, вези́, вези́.	везённый.	
Ползти́, to crawl	полза́ть	ползу́, ползёшь, ползётъ, ползёмъ, ползёте, ползутъ, ползутъ.	ползу́, ползёшь, ползётъ, ползёмъ, ползёте, ползутъ, ползутъ.	ползутъ, ползутъ, ползутъ, ползутъ, ползутъ, ползутъ.	ползъ, ползъ, ползъ, ползъ, ползъ, ползъ.	ползъ, ползъ, ползъ, ползъ, ползъ, ползъ.	ползи́, ползи́, ползи́, ползи́, ползи́, ползи́.	—	
Грызть, to gnaw	грыза́ть	грызу́, грызёшь, грызётъ, грызёмъ, грызёте, грызутъ, грызутъ.	грызу́, грызёшь, грызётъ, грызёмъ, грызёте, грызутъ, грызутъ.	грызутъ, грызутъ, грызутъ, грызутъ, грызутъ, грызутъ.	грызъ, грызъ, грызъ, грызъ, грызъ, грызъ.	грызъ, грызъ, грызъ, грызъ, грызъ, грызъ.	грызи́, грызи́, грызи́, грызи́, грызи́, грызи́.	грызенный.	
Лезть, to climb	лѣза́ть	лѣзу́, лѣзёшь, лѣзётъ, лѣзёмъ, лѣзёте, лѣзутъ, лѣзутъ.	лѣзу́, лѣзёшь, лѣзётъ, лѣзёмъ, лѣзёте, лѣзутъ, лѣзутъ.	лѣзутъ, лѣзутъ, лѣзутъ, лѣзутъ, лѣзутъ, лѣзутъ.	лѣзъ, лѣзъ, лѣзъ, лѣзъ, лѣзъ, лѣзъ.	лѣзъ, лѣзъ, лѣзъ, лѣзъ, лѣзъ, лѣзъ.	лѣзи́, лѣзи́, лѣзи́, лѣзи́, лѣзи́, лѣзи́.	—	
Верзати́ (отчерзати́), to open	верза́ть	верзу́, верзёшь, верзётъ, верзёмъ, верзёте, верзутъ, верзутъ.	верзу́, верзёшь, верзётъ, верзёмъ, верзёте, верзутъ, верзутъ.	верзутъ, верзутъ, верзутъ, верзутъ, верзутъ, верзутъ.	верзъ, верзъ, верзъ, верзъ, верзъ, верзъ.	верзъ, верзъ, верзъ, верзъ, верзъ, верзъ.	верзи́, верзи́, верзи́, верзи́, верзи́, верзи́.	верзтый.	
Нести́, to bring	—	несу́, несёшь, несётъ, несёмъ, несёте, несутъ, несутъ.	несу́, несёшь, несётъ, несёмъ, несёте, несутъ, несутъ.	несутъ, несутъ, несутъ, несутъ, несутъ, несутъ.	несъ, несъ, несъ, несъ, несъ, несъ.	несъ, несъ, несъ, несъ, несъ, несъ.	неси́, неси́, неси́, неси́, неси́, неси́.	несённый.	
Пасты́, to pasture	паса́ть	пасу́, пасёшь, пасётъ, пасёмъ, пасёте, пасутъ, пасутъ.	пасу́, пасёшь, пасётъ, пасёмъ, пасёте, пасутъ, пасутъ.	пасутъ, пасутъ, пасутъ, пасутъ, пасутъ, пасутъ.	пасъ, пасъ, пасъ, пасъ, пасъ, пасъ.	пасъ, пасъ, пасъ, пасъ, пасъ, пасъ.	паси́, паси́, паси́, паси́, паси́, паси́.	пасённый.	
Трасти́, to shake	тряса́ть	трясу́, трясёшь, трясётъ, трясёмъ, трясёте, трясутъ, трясутъ.	трясу́, трясёшь, трясётъ, трясёмъ, трясёте, трясутъ, трясутъ.	трясутъ, трясутъ, трясутъ, трясутъ, трясутъ, трясутъ.	трясъ, трясъ, трясъ, трясъ, трясъ, трясъ.	трясъ, трясъ, трясъ, трясъ, трясъ, трясъ.	тряси́, тряси́, тряси́, тряси́, тряси́, тряси́.	трясённый.	
Грести́ or Гребсти́, to row	гребя́ть	гребу́, гребёшь, гребётъ, гребёмъ, гребёте, гребутъ, гребутъ.	гребу́, гребёшь, гребётъ, гребёмъ, гребёте, гребутъ, гребутъ.	гребутъ, гребутъ, гребутъ, гребутъ, гребутъ, гребутъ.	гребъ, гребъ, гребъ, гребъ, гребъ, гребъ.	гребъ, гребъ, гребъ, гребъ, гребъ, гребъ.	гребй́, гребй́, гребй́, гребй́, гребй́, гребй́.	гребённый.	
Скредсти́, to scrape	скребя́ть	скребу́, скребёшь, скребётъ, скребёмъ, скребёте, скребутъ, скребутъ.	скребу́, скребёшь, скребётъ, скребёмъ, скребёте, скребутъ, скребутъ.	скребутъ, скребутъ, скребутъ, скребутъ, скребутъ, скребутъ.	скребъ, скребъ, скребъ, скребъ, скребъ, скребъ.	скребъ, скребъ, скребъ, скребъ, скребъ, скребъ.	скреби́, скреби́, скреби́, скреби́, скреби́, скреби́.	скребённый.	
Бодсти́, to butt	бодя́ть	боду́, бодёшь, бодётъ, бодёмъ, бодёте, бодутъ, бодутъ.	боду́, бодёшь, бодётъ, бодёмъ, бодёте, бодутъ, бодутъ.	бодутъ, бодутъ, бодутъ, бодутъ, бодутъ, бодутъ.	бодъ, бодъ, бодъ, бодъ, бодъ, бодъ.	бодъ, бодъ, бодъ, бодъ, бодъ, бодъ.	боди́, боди́, боди́, боди́, боди́, боди́.	—	
Блюсти́, to keep	блюжа́ть	блюду́, блюдёшь, блюдётъ, блюдёмъ, блюдёте, блюдутъ, блюдутъ.	блюду́, блюдёшь, блюдётъ, блюдёмъ, блюдёте, блюдутъ, блюдутъ.	блюдутъ, блюдутъ, блюдутъ, блюдутъ, блюдутъ, блюдутъ.	блюдъ, блюдъ, блюдъ, блюдъ, блюдъ, блюдъ.	блюдъ, блюдъ, блюдъ, блюдъ, блюдъ, блюдъ.	блюди́, блюди́, блюди́, блюди́, блюди́, блюди́.	блюдённый.	
Брести́, to ramble	—	бреду́, бредёшь, бредётъ, бредёмъ, бредёте, бредутъ, бредутъ.	бреду́, бредёшь, бредётъ, бредёмъ, бредёте, бредутъ, бредутъ.	бредутъ, бредутъ, бредутъ, бредутъ, бредутъ, бредутъ.	брёдъ, брёдъ, брёдъ, брёдъ, брёдъ, брёдъ.	брёдъ, брёдъ, брёдъ, брёдъ, брёдъ, брёдъ.	бреди́, бреди́, бреди́, бреди́, бреди́, бреди́.	—	
Вести́, to lead	—	веду́, ведёшь, ведётъ, ведёмъ, ведёте, ведутъ, ведутъ.	веду́, ведёшь, ведётъ, ведёмъ, ведёте, ведутъ, ведутъ.	ведутъ, ведутъ, ведутъ, ведутъ, ведутъ, ведутъ.	вёлъ, вёлъ, вёлъ, вёлъ, вёлъ, вёлъ.	вёлъ, вёлъ, вёлъ, вёлъ, вёлъ, вёлъ.	веди́, веди́, веди́, веди́, веди́, веди́.	ведённый.	
Класть, to lay	клады́вать	кладу́, кладёшь, кладётъ, кладёмъ, кладёте, кладутъ, кладутъ.	кладу́, кладёшь, кладётъ, кладёмъ, кладёте, кладутъ, кладутъ.	кладутъ, кладутъ, кладутъ, кладутъ, кладутъ, кладутъ.	кладъ, кладъ, кладъ, кладъ, кладъ, кладъ.	кладъ, кладъ, кладъ, кладъ, кладъ, кладъ.	клади́, клади́, клади́, клади́, клади́, клади́.	кладе́нный.	
Пасты́, <i>perf. asp.</i> to fall	—	пада́ю, падаёшь, падётъ, падёмъ, падёте, падутъ, падутъ.	пада́ю, падаёшь, падётъ, падёмъ, падёте, падутъ, падутъ.	падутъ, падутъ, падутъ, падутъ, падутъ, падутъ.	падъ, падъ, падъ, падъ, падъ, падъ.	падъ, падъ, падъ, падъ, падъ, падъ.	пай́, пай́, пай́, пай́, пай́, пай́.	—	
Прясти́, to spin	пряда́ть	пряду́, прядёшь, прядётъ, прядёмъ, прядёте, прядутъ, прядутъ.	пряду́, прядёшь, прядётъ, прядёмъ, прядёте, прядутъ, прядутъ.	прядутъ, прядутъ, прядутъ, прядутъ, прядутъ, прядутъ.	прядъ, прядъ, прядъ, прядъ, прядъ, прядъ.	прядъ, прядъ, прядъ, прядъ, прядъ, прядъ.	пряди́, пряди́, пряди́, пряди́, пряди́, пряди́.	пряде́нный.	
Грести́, to go	—	граду́, градёшь, градётъ, градёмъ, градёте, градутъ, градутъ.	граду́, градёшь, градётъ, градёмъ, градёте, градутъ, градутъ.	градутъ, градутъ, градутъ, градутъ, градутъ, градутъ.	—	—	гради́, гради́, гради́, гради́, гради́, гради́.	—	
Красть, to steal	крады́вать	краду́, крадёшь, крадётъ, крадёмъ, крадёте, крадутъ, крадутъ.	краду́, крадёшь, крадётъ, крадёмъ, крадёте, крадутъ, крадутъ.	крадутъ, крадутъ, крадутъ, крадутъ, крадутъ, крадутъ.	крадъ, крадъ, крадъ, крадъ, крадъ, крадъ.	крадъ, крадъ, крадъ, крадъ, крадъ, крадъ.	кради́, кради́, кради́, кради́, кради́, кради́.	краде́нный.	
Скести́, <i>perf. asp.</i> to sit	—	сѣду́, сѣдёшь, сѣдётъ, сѣдёмъ, сѣдёте, сѣдутъ, сѣдутъ.	сѣду́, сѣдёшь, сѣдётъ, сѣдёмъ, сѣдёте, сѣдутъ, сѣдутъ.	сѣдутъ, сѣдутъ, сѣдутъ, сѣдутъ, сѣдутъ, сѣдутъ.	сѣдъ, сѣдъ, сѣдъ, сѣдъ, сѣдъ, сѣдъ.	сѣдъ, сѣдъ, сѣдъ, сѣдъ, сѣдъ, сѣдъ.	сѣди́, сѣди́, сѣди́, сѣди́, сѣди́, сѣди́.	—	
Мести́, to perturb	мета́ть	мету́, метёшь, метётъ, метёмъ, метёте, метутъ, метутъ.	мету́, метёшь, метётъ, метёмъ, метёте, метутъ, метутъ.	метутъ, метутъ, метутъ, метутъ, метутъ, метутъ.	мѣлъ, мѣлъ, мѣлъ, мѣлъ, мѣлъ, мѣлъ.	мѣлъ, мѣлъ, мѣлъ, мѣлъ, мѣлъ, мѣлъ.	мети́, мети́, мети́, мети́, мети́, мети́.	мѣте́нный.	
Гнесты́, to sweep	гнѣта́ть	гнѣту́, гнѣдёшь, гнѣдётъ, гнѣдёмъ, гнѣдёте, гнѣдутъ, гнѣдутъ.	гнѣту́, гнѣдёшь, гнѣдётъ, гнѣдёмъ, гнѣдёте, гнѣдутъ, гнѣдутъ.	гнѣдутъ, гнѣдутъ, гнѣдутъ, гнѣдутъ, гнѣдутъ, гнѣдутъ.	гнѣхъ, гнѣхъ, гнѣхъ, гнѣхъ, гнѣхъ, гнѣхъ.	гнѣхъ, гнѣхъ, гнѣхъ, гнѣхъ, гнѣхъ, гнѣхъ.	гнѣти́, гнѣти́, гнѣти́, гнѣти́, гнѣти́, гнѣти́.	гнѣте́нный.	
Плести́, to plait	плета́ть	плету́, плетёшь, плетётъ, плетёмъ, плетёте, плетутъ, плетутъ.	плету́, плетёшь, плетётъ, плетёмъ, плетёте, плетутъ, плетутъ.	плетутъ, плетутъ, плетутъ, плетутъ, плетутъ, плетутъ.	плѣтъ, плѣтъ, плѣтъ, плѣтъ, плѣтъ, плѣтъ.	плѣтъ, плѣтъ, плѣтъ, плѣтъ, плѣтъ, плѣтъ.	плети́, плети́, плети́, плети́, плети́, плети́.	плете́нный.	
Цвѣсти́, to flower	цвѣта́ть	цвѣту́, цвѣдёшь, цвѣдётъ, цвѣдёмъ, цвѣдёте, цвѣдутъ, цвѣдутъ.	цвѣту́, цвѣдёшь, цвѣдётъ, цвѣдёмъ, цвѣдёте, цвѣдутъ, цвѣдутъ.	цвѣдутъ, цвѣдутъ, цвѣдутъ, цвѣдутъ, цвѣдутъ, цвѣдутъ.	цвѣтъ, цвѣтъ, цвѣтъ, цвѣтъ, цвѣтъ, цвѣтъ.	цвѣтъ, цвѣтъ, цвѣтъ, цвѣтъ, цвѣтъ, цвѣтъ.	цвѣти́, цвѣти́, цвѣти́, цвѣти́, цвѣти́, цвѣти́.	—	
Рысти́ (обрысти́), to find out	рыта́ть	рыту́, рыдёшь, рыдётъ, рыдёмъ, рыдёте, рыдутъ, рыдутъ.	рыту́, рыдёшь, рыдётъ, рыдёмъ, рыдёте, рыдутъ, рыдутъ.	рыдутъ, рыдутъ, рыдутъ, рыдутъ, рыдутъ, рыдутъ.	рылъ, рылъ, рылъ, рылъ, рылъ, рылъ.	рылъ, рылъ, рылъ, рылъ, рылъ, рылъ.	рыти́, рыти́, рыти́, рыти́, рыти́, рыти́.	рыте́нный.	
Чести́ (счесть), to count	чита́ть	читу́, читёшь, читётъ, читёмъ, читёте, читутъ, читутъ.	читу́, читёшь, читётъ, читёмъ, читёте, читутъ, читутъ.	читутъ, читутъ, читутъ, читутъ, читутъ, читутъ.	чѣлъ, чѣлъ, чѣлъ, чѣлъ, чѣлъ, чѣлъ.	чѣлъ, чѣлъ, чѣлъ, чѣлъ, чѣлъ, чѣлъ.	читй́, читй́, читй́, читй́, читй́, читй́.	читённый.	

Знать, to know, I. 1, <i>pres.</i> знаю,	Тмить, to darken, II. 1, <i>pres.</i> тмю.
знаешь.	Бдѣть, to wake, — бдю.
Пхать, to push, — пхāju.	Зрѣть, to see, — зрю.
Чкѣть, to clash, — чкāju.	Мжить, to twinkle, II. 3, <i>pres.</i> мжу,
Грѣть, to warm, I. 4, <i>pres.</i> грѣю.	мжншь.
Зрѣть, to ripen, — зрѣю.	Мшить, to cover with moss, — мшу.
Млѣть, to be stupified, — млѣю.	Тщѣться, to endeavour, — тщуся.
Прѣть, to stew, — прѣю.	Мчать, to hurry, — мчу.
Рдѣть, to redden, — рдѣю.	Изѣть (пронзѣть), to pierce, II. 4,
Смѣть, to dare, — смѣю.	<i>pres.</i> -нжу, изншь.
Спѣть, to ripen, — спѣю.	Льстить, to flatter, II. 7, <i>pres.</i> льщу,
Тлѣть, to rot, — тлѣю.	льстншь.
Длѣть, to prolong, II. 1, <i>pres.</i> длю.	Мстить, to avenge, — мщу,
длншь.	мстншь.
Дмѣть, to swell, — дмю.	Гнуть, to bend, III. 1. <i>pres.</i> гну, гнѣшь.
Злѣть, to irritate, — злю.	Лгнушь, to stick, — лгну.
Мнѣть, to think, — мню.	Мзгнуть, to turn sour, — мзгну.
Снѣться, to dream, <i>impers.</i> снѣтся.	Мкнуть, to shut, — мкну.
Тлѣть, to corrupt, — тлю,	Снуть, to fall asleep, — сну.
тлншь.	

The preceding table of irregular verbs gives also the *iterative aspect* and the *passive participle*, inflections which in these verbs do not follow always the general rules of the formation.

Delineation
of verbs.

59.—The property of the Russian verbs to have more or less aspects, is named their *delineation* (начертаніе), and depends as well upon their exterior form as upon their meaning. With this relation the verbs, as is above mentioned (§ 50), are *simple* (простые) or *prepositional* (предложные).

1. The *simple* verbs, which are without a preposition, can be *complete* (полные), *double* (сугубые), *incomplete* (неполные) and *defective* (недостаточные). The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate a physical action of men or animals, as кидать, to throw; плевать, to spit. The *double* simple verbs are those which express the movement of an acting object, as идти and ходить, to go; нести and носить, to bring. The *incomplete* and *defective* simple verbs are those which are not included in

the two preceding subdivisions, as *дѣлать*, *to make*; *имѣть*, *to have*.

2. The *prepositional* verbs, which are formed with any preposition, are subdivided, relatively to their delineation, according as they are derivated from the incomplete, defective, complete or double simple verbs.—In general the delineation of the Russian verbs, as well simple as prepositional, is seen in the following table.

DELINEATION OF VERBS.

I. SIMPLE VERBS.

1. The *incomplete* simple verbs have 2 aspects:

1) *imperfect*. 2) *iterative*.

дѣлать.

дѣлывать.

3. The *defective* simple verbs have only the *imperfect* aspect.

имѣть.

3. The *complete* simple verbs have the 3 aspects:

1) *imperfect*. 2) *iterative*. 3) *perf. of unity*.

кидѣть.

кидывать.

кинуть.

4. The *double* simple verbs are two verbs which have together 3 aspects:

1) *definite imp.* 2) *indef. imp.* 3) *iterative*.

нести.

носить.

нашивать.

II. PREPOSITIONAL VERBS.

1. Formed from the *incomplete* simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have 2 aspects:

1) *imperfect*. 2) *perfect of duration*.

обдѣлывать.

обдѣлать.

2. Formed from the *defective* simple verbs, they have only the aspect *perfect of duration*.

возимѣть.

3. Formed from the *complete* simple verbs, they have the 3 aspects:

1) *imperfect*. 2) *perf. of durat.* 3) *perf. of unity*.

закидывать.

закидать.

закинуть.

4. Formed from the *double* simple verbs, there are two various verbs, each with 2 aspects: a) from the *definite* verb. b) from the *indefinite* verb.

1) *imperf.* 2) *perfect*. 1) *imperf.* 2) *perfect*.

выносить. *вынести*. *вынашивать*. *выносить*.

60.—The *incomplete* simple verbs are those which Simple verbs. do not designate a physical action properly so called, neither a movement of a place to another. These verbs have two aspects: 1) the *imperfect* aspect, and 2) the *iterative* aspect. The first, which is the radical form of the verb, ends in *тъ*, *чь*, *ти* or *шу*, and the latter in *ывать*, *ивать*, *вать* or

amb, and is formed from the imperfect aspect, as is seen in the following examples.

In the formation of the iterative aspect the tonic accent is placed on the termination *самъ* and *амъ*, whilst in *ывамъ* and *ивамъ* it is placed on the antepenultima, and if in this syllable is an *o*, this vowel is changed into *á*. We must yet observe that the iterative aspect is seldom used in the infinitive, and it has in general only the preterit tense; e. g. *не пивамъ тебѣ вина́*, *you ought not to drink wine*; *онъ пѣзжалъ верхомъ*, *he rid often*; but this inflection is necessary to form the prepositional verbs. The table of irregular verbs, above shown (§ 58), gives also the iterative aspect, which in these verbs presents some irregularities.

1) Imperfect aspect.	2) Iterative asp.
Гадать, to guess, I. 1.	га́дывать.
Ду́мать, to think, —	ду́мывать.
Дѣ́лать, to make, —	дѣ́лывать.
Игра́ть, to play, —	и́грывать.
Ку́тать, to wrap, —	ку́тывать.
Мота́ть, to wind, —	ма́тывать.
Рабо́тать, to work, —	раба́тывать.
Щу́пать, to sound, —	щу́пывать.
Зна́ть, to know, —	знава́ть.
Кова́ть, to forge, I. 2.	ко́вывать.
Рисова́ть, to draw, —	рисо́вывать.
Сове́товать, to counsel, —	совѣ́тывать.
Воева́ть, to war, —	воёвывать.
Дневáть, to pass the day, —	днёвывать.
Ночевáть, to pass the night, —	ночёвывать.
Гуля́ть, to take a walk, I. 3.	гу́ливать.
Равня́ть, to equal, —	ра́внивать.
Смѣ́яться, to laugh, —	смѣ́иваться.
Вѣ́ять, to blow, —	вѣ́вать.
Сѣ́ять, to sow, —	сѣ́вать.
Слабе́ть, to grow weak, I. 4.	слабѣ́вать.
Грѣ́ть, to warm, —	грѣ́вать.
Говѣ́ть, to keep fast, —	га́вливать.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative asp.*

Брани́ть, to scold, II, 1.	бра́нивать.
Пали́ть, to fire, —	па́ливать.
Моли́ть, to pray, —	ма́ливать.
Спо́рить, to contend, —	спа́ривать.
Дари́ть, to give, —	да́ривать.
Дразни́ть, to provoke, —	дра́жнить.
Боле́ть, to ache, —	ба́ливать.
Смотре́ть, to look, —	сма́тривать.
Горе́ть, to burn, —	гара́ть.
Веле́ть, to order, —	велѣ́вать.
Зре́ть, to see, —	зира́ть.
Пой́ть, to give to drink,	па́ивать.
Клеи́ть, to glue, —	кле́ивать.
Боя́ться, to fear, —	ба́иваться.
Поро́ть, to rip, —	па́рывать.
Моло́ть, to grind, —	ма́лыивать.
Люби́ть, to love, II. 2.	лю́бляивать.
Лови́ть, to catch, —	ла́вливать.
Руби́ть, to hew, —	руба́ть.
Корми́ть, to nourish, —	ка́рмливать.
Топи́ть, to heat, —	та́пливать.
Терпе́ть, to suffer, —	те́рпивно.
Кипѣ́ть, to boil, —	кипа́ть.
Дрема́ть, to slumber, —	дре́мливо.
Сыпа́ть, to strew, —	сыпа́ть.
Хрома́ть, to be lame, —	хра́мливо.
Лечи́ть, to cure, II. 3.	ле́чить.
Служи́ть, to serve, —	слу́жить.
Туши́ть, to put out, —	ту́шить.
Морщи́ть, to wrinkle, —	ма́ршивать.
Держа́ть, to keep, —	де́рживать.
Молча́ть, to be silent, —	ма́лчиивать.
Дыша́ть, to breathe, —	дыха́ть.
Глади́ть, to even, II. 4.	гла́живать.
Городи́ть, to enclose, —	гора́живать.
Суди́ть, to judge, —	су́живать.
Грузи́ть, to lade, —	гру́живать.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative asp.*

Сидѣть, to sit, II. 4.	сиживатьъ.
Вязать, to tie, —	вязывать.
Платить, to pay, II. 5.	плачивать.
Колотить, to knock, —	колачивать.
Молотить, to thrash, —	молачивать.
Плакать, to weep, —	плакивать.
Вѣсить, to weigh, II. 6.	вѣшивать.
Просить, to ask, —	прашивать.
Гасить, to extinguish, —	гашивать.
Писать, to write, —	писывать.
Плясать, to dance, —	плясывать.
Пахать, to plough, —	пахивать.
Гостить, to visit, II. 7.	гашивать.
Мостить, to floor, —	мащивать.
Снастить, to rig, —	снашивать.
Искать, to seek, —	искивать.
Топнуть, to sink, III. 1.	топать.
Тянуть, to draw, —	тягивать.
Вянуть, to fade, —	вядать.
Сохнуть, to dry, —	сыхать.
Пахнуть, to smell, —	пахивать.
Гнуть, to bend, —	гибать.
Мкнуть, to shut, —	мыкать.
Сосать, to suck, —	сасывать.
Переть, to press, III. 2.	пирать.
Тереть, to rub, —	тирать.

61.—The *defective* simple verbs are those which have only the *indefinite imperfect* aspect, such are the following verbs:

Адѣть, to grow ruby. I. 4.	Желать, to wish, I. 1.
Бѣдствовать, to be in misery, I. 2.	Имѣть, to have, I. 4.
Винить, to accuse, II. 1.	Карать, to punish, I. 1.
Владѣть, to govern, I. 4.	Лстить, to flatter, II. 7.
Вредить, to hurt, II. 4.	Мечтать, to imagine, I. 1.
Гордиться, to be proud, II. 4.	Мирить, to pacify, II. 1.
Жалѣть, to have pity, I. 4.	Мудрить, to subtilize, II. 1.

Мягчить, to mollify, II. 3.	Творить, to create, II. 1.
Пóдничать, to lunch, I. 1.	Терять, to lose, I. 3.
Радѣть, to take care, I. 4.	Торопить, to hurry, II. 2.
Растить, to let grow, II. 7.	Умничать, to refine, I. 1.
Роптáть, to murmur, II. 7.	Умѣть, to know, I. 4.
Рыдáть, to sob, I. 1.	Хитрить, to be artful, II. 1.
Святить, to sanctify, II. 7.	Хранить, to preserve, II. 1.
Спѣшнѣть, to hasten, II. 3.	Хотѣть, to will, <i>irr.</i>
Старáться, to endeavour, I. 1.	Щадить, to spare, II. 4.

The defective verbs differ from the incomplete verbs in as much as they have not the iterative aspect, which in general is used only in verbs designating an ordinary, non intellectual action, and it is not found in poetry neither in an elevated style.

62.—The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate ordinarily a physical action of men or animals, or, speaking more correctly, a visible or audible action. These verbs have the three aspects: 1) the *imperfect*, 2) the *iterative*, and 3) the *perfect of unity*. The two first aspects have all the properties of those of incomplete verbs; but the perfect aspect of unity ends in *нѣть*, and is formed putting this termination in the place of that of the imperfect aspect, sometimes with a little change of the vowel, and sometimes with the elision of the preceding consonant, as is seen in the following examples.

1) *Imperfect aspect.* 2) *Iterative aspect.* 3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

А́хать, to sigh, I. 1.	а́хивать.	а́хнѣть, III. 1.
Блístать, to shine, —	—	блестнѣть, —
Болтáть, to shake, —	бáлтывать.	болтнѣть, —
Глотáть, to swallow, —	глáтывать.	глонѣть, —
Двѣгáть, to move, I. 1. and		

II. 4. двѣгивать and двѣгáть. двѣнѣть, —
Дерзáть, to dare, I. 1. дерзнѣть, —

1) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Iterative aspect.</i>	3) <i>Perf. asp. of unity.</i>
Зѣвѣть, to yawn, I. 1.	зѣвывать.	зѣвнѣть, III, 1.
Касѣться, to touch, — .	—	коснѣться, —
Квѣкать, to quack, — .	квѣкивать.	квѣкнуть, —
Кивѣть, to give a nod, —	—	кивнѣть, —
Кидѣть, to cast, — . .	кидывать.	кинѣть, —
Лопѣть, to burst, — . .	лопывать.	лопнѣть, —
Нюхѣть, to smell, — . .	нюхивать.	нюхнѣть, —
Порхѣть, to flutter, — .	пѣрхивать.	порхнѣть, —
Прыгѣть, to jump, — .	прыгивать.	прыгнѣть, —
Прѣдѣть, to bound, — .	прѣдывать.	прѣднѣть, —
Сверкѣть, to flash, — .	свѣркивать.	сверкнѣть, —
Толкѣть, to push, — . .	талкивать.	толкнѣть, —
Трогѣть, to touch, — .	трѣгивать.	трѣгнѣть, —
Хѣркать, to spit, — . .	хѣркивать.	хѣркнѣть, —
Хлопѣть, to clap, — . .	хлопывать.	хлопнѣть, —
Совѣть, to shove, I. 2.	совывать	сунѣть, —
Клевѣть, to peck, — . .	клѣвывать.	клѣнѣть, —
Плевѣть, to spit, — . .	плѣвывать.	плѣнѣть, —
Жевѣть, to chew, — . .	жѣвывать.	жевнѣть, —
Кашлять, to cough, I. 3.	кашливать.	кашлянѣть, —
Нырѣть, to dive, — . .	ныривать.	нырнѣть, —
Стрѣлять, to shoot, — .	стрѣливать	стрѣльнѣть, —
Швырѣть, to sling, — .	швыривать.	швырнѣть, —
Рѣять, to throw, — . .	—	ринѣть, —
Скользѣть, to slip, II. 1.	скѣльзывать.	скользнѣть, —
Шевелѣть, to stir, — . .	шевелѣвать.	шевелѣнѣть, —
Колѣть, to sting, — . .	калывать.	кольнѣть, —
Давѣть, to press, II. 2.	давливать.	давнѣть, —
Рубѣть, to hew, — . . .	рубѣть.	рубнѣть, —
Гремѣть, to thunder, — .	—	грѣнѣть, —
Храпѣть, to snore, — .	хрѣпывать.	храпнѣть, —
Трѣпѣть, to brake, — .	трѣпливать.	трѣпнѣть, —
Щипѣть, to pinch, — .	щипывать.	щипнѣть, —
Ворошить, to rummage, II. 3.	ворѣшивать.	ворохнѣть, —
Плющѣть, to flatten, — .	плющивать.	плюснѣть, —
Визжѣть, to squeak, — .	визгивать.	визгнѣть, —
Дрожѣть, to tremble, —	дрѣгивать.	дрогнѣть, —

1) *imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative aspect.*3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

Крича́ть, to cry, II. 3.	кри́кивать.	кри́кнуть, III. 1.
Пы́шать, to burn, — . . .	пы́хивать.	пы́хнуть, —
Тре́щать, to burst, — . . .	тре́скивать.	тре́снуть, —
Гля́дѣть, to look, II. 4.	гля́дивать.	гля́нуть, —
Бры́згать, to splash, — . . .	бры́згивать.	бры́знуть, —
Лиза́ть, to lick, — . . .	ли́зывать.	ли́знуть, —
Ма́зать, to anoint, — . . .	ма́зывать.	ма́знуть, —
Верту́ть, to turn, II. 5.	вѣ́ртывать or вѣ́рчивать.	верну́ть, —
Ска́кать, to leap, — . . .	ска́кивать.	скокну́ть, —
Кли́кать, to call, — . . .	кли́кать.	кли́кнуть, —
Шепта́ть, to whisper, —	ше́птывать.	шепну́ть, —
Труси́ть, to sprinkle, II. 6.	—	тру́хнуть, —
Колыха́ть, to swing, — . . .	колы́хивать.	колы́хнуть, —
Маха́ть, to wave, — . . .	ма́хивать.	махну́ть, —
Плеска́ть, to splash, II. 7.	плéскивать.	плесну́ть, —
Пры́скать, to syringe, —	пры́скивать.	пры́снуть, —
Свиста́ть, to whistle, —	сви́стывать.	сви́снуть, —
Хлеста́ть, to lash, — . . .	хлё́стывать.	хлесну́ть, —
Грести́, to scrape, <i>irr.</i>	гребáть.	гребну́ть, —
Ду́ть, to blow, — . . .	дува́ть.	ду́нуть, —
Жечь, to burn, — . . .	жигáть,	жигну́ть, —
Рва́ть, to tear, — . . .	рыва́ть.	рвану́ть, —
Стри́чь, to shear, . . .	стрига́ть.	стригну́ть, —
Трасти́, to skake, — . . .	тряса́ть.	тряхну́ть, —

Some verbs, as *мину́ть, обману́ть, помяну́ть, вы́нуть*, which are perfect aspects of *миновáть, to pass; обмáнывать, to cheat; поминáть, to mention; вы́нимáть, to take out*, have the termination of the perfect aspect of unity; but by their meaning they do not designate an action performed only once. In these verbs the letter *н* belongs to the root, and not to the termination.

63.—The *double* simple verbs are those which designate the movement of an acting object, or sometimes a visible or audible action. These verbs have together three aspects: 1) the *definite imperfect*, 2) the *indefinite imperfect*, and 3) the *iterative*.

aspect. The definite aspect is the radical form, from which are derived both the others. These are the following verbs:

- 1) *Definite imperfect aspect.* 2) *Indefinite imp. aspect.* 3) *Iterative aspect.*

Блудить, to ramble, II. 4.	блуждать, I. 1.	—
Брестить, to wander, <i>irr.</i>	бродить, II. 4.	бра́живать.
Бѣжать, to run, <i>irr.</i>	бѣгать, I. 1.	бѣгивать and бѣгать.
Валить, to throw down, II. 1.	валить, I. 3.	ва́ливать.
Везти, to carry, <i>irr.</i>	возить, II. 4.	ва́живать.
Вести, to lead, <i>irr.</i>	водить, —	ва́живать.
Видѣть, to see, II. 4.	видать, I. 1.	ви́дывать.
Гнать, to drive, <i>irr.</i>	гонять, I. 3.	га́нживать.
Идти, to go, <i>irr.</i>	ходить, II. 4.	ха́живать.
Катить, to roll, II. 5.	качать, I. 1.	ка́чивать.
Кривить, to crook, II. 2.	кривлять, I. 3.	крѣ́пиво.
Летѣть, to fly, II. 5.	летать, I. 1.	лѣ́тывать.
Ломить, to break, II. 2.	ломать, —	ла́мывать.
Лѣзть, to climb, <i>irr.</i>	ла́зить, II. 4.	лѣ́зать and ла́живать.
Нести, to bring, <i>irr.</i>	носить, II. 6.	на́шивать.
Плыть, to swim, <i>irr.</i>	плавать, I. 1.	пла́ывать.
Ползти, to crawl, <i>irr.</i>	ползать, —	полза́ть and ползы́вать.
Ронить, to let fall, II. 1.	ронять, I. 3.	ра́нживать.
Слышать, to hear, II. 3.	слыхать, I. 1.	слы́живать.
Садить, to seat, II. 4.	сажать, —	са́живать.
Ташить, to trail, II. 3.	таскать, —	та́скивать.
Ѣхать, to ride, <i>irr.</i>	ѣздить, II. 4.	ѣ́живать and ѣ́зжать.

The Russian language has some verbs which, with a double termination, do not designate a movement; such are: блиста́ть and блестя́ть, *to shine*; мѣрять and мѣрять, *to measure*; сви́стать and сви́стѣть, *to whistle*. These verbs do not belong to the class of the double verbs; they are two various forms which have the same meaning, and which do not express the definite or indefinite nature of the action.

Prepositional verbs.

64.—The prepositional verbs are formed from the simple verbs by means of any preposition. The prepositions, when they are joined to a verb, sub-

ject it to sundry changes either in the voice, in the aspect and time, or in the meaning:

1. A neuter verb sometimes takes with the preposition the active meaning, as: спать, *to sleep*, and проспáть, *to pass in sleeping*; быть, *to be*, and забыть, *to forget*; пла́кать, *to weep*, and вы́плакать, *to obtain by weeping*.

2. The influence of a preposition on the time and aspect is more important than that on the voice. A simple verb, taking a preposition, receives a more restricted meaning. Thus, by joining to a preposition, the iterative aspect becomes imperfect, and the imperfect aspect becomes perfect. But this latter remains a perfect aspect even with a preposition, as is seen by the two following examples.

Simple figure.	Prepositional figure.
Двѣнуть, to move, } Бросить, to throw, } <i>perf. asp. of unity.</i>	Вдвѣнуть, to move in, } <i>perf. asp.</i> Набросить, to throw on, } <i>of unity.</i>
Двѣгать, } бросать, } <i>imperfect aspect</i>	Вдвѣгать, } <i>perf. asp. of duration.</i> набросать, } <i>perf. asp. of duration.</i>
Двѣгать or двѣгивать, } брасывать, } <i>iterative asp.</i>	Вдвѣгать or вдвѣгивать, } <i>imperfect</i> набрасывать, } <i>asp.</i>

3. The acceptation of the verb, independently of the completion of the action, is modified by the meaning of the preposition, as is seen in the two following examples: ходить or идти, *to go*, and имáть or ять, *to take*.

Входить, войти, to go in.	Нисходить, нисзойти, to go down.
Восходить, взойти, to go up.	Обходить, обойти, to go round.
Выходить, выйти, to go out.	Отходить, отойти, to go away.
Доходить, дойти, to come to.	Переходить, перейти, to go
Заходить, зайти, to go behind.	over.
Исходить, изойти, to go out.	Превосходить, превзойти, to
Находить, найти, to go upon.	surpass.

Походіть, to resemble.	Донимать, донять, to get the remainder.
Пойти, to go.	
Подходить, подойти, to go under.	Занимать, занять, to borrow.
Предходить, to go before.	Изнимать, изнять, to take out.
Приходить, прийти, to come in.	Нанимать, нанять, to hire.
Проходить, пройти, to go through.	Обнимать, обнять, to embrace.
Пропсходить, произойти, to proceed.	Отнимать, отнять, to take away.
Расходиться, разойтись, to go asunder.	Перенимать, перенять, to intercept. [stand.
Сходить, сойти, to go down.	Понимать, понять, to understand.
Снисходить, снизойти, to condescend.	Поймать, to catch.
Уходить, уйти, to go away.	Поднимать, поднять, to take up.
Внимать, внять, to attend to.	Предпринимать, предпринять, to undertake.
Взимать, to levy.	Принимать, принять, to accept.
Взять, to take.	Приподнимать, приподнять, to raise up.
Воздымать, to raise.	Пронимать, пронять, to put through.
Воспринимать, воспринять, to receive.	Разнимать, разнять, to take asunder.
Вынимать, вынуть, to take out.	Снимать, снять, to take off.
	Унимать, унять, to repress.

The two preceding examples show that the prepositions which are joined to verbs, are: в (во), вз (взо, воз), вы, до, за, из (изо), на, над (надо), низ (низо), о or об (обо), от (ото), пере or пре, по, под (подо), при, про, раз (разо), с (со), у. We must remark that the prepositions which end in a vowel, never undergo a change, whilst those which end in a consonant, take the vowel *o*, when they have to be united to a verb which begins with two or three consonants, as well as to the verb идти (*sl. ити*), in which the vowel *u* besides that changes into the semi-vowel (*й*).

The prepositions без (безо), пред (предо), and also с (со) in the meaning of a reciprocal action, modifying the acceptance of a verb, do not communicate to it the meaning of the completion of an action. Joined to one of these prepositions, the verb remains in its imperfect aspect, as: безчестить, to dishonour; предвидеть, to foresee; содействовать, to cooperate.

It is the same with adverbs used sometimes for prepositions, e. g. *ПРОТИВСТОЯТЬ*, to resist; *МИМОИДТИ*, to come by.

Care must be taken not to confound the prepositional verbs with the verbs which are derived from nouns formed with a preposition, as: *РАЗУМѢТЬ*, to understand; from *РАЗУМЪ*, intelligence; *ПОМНИТЬ*, to remember, from *ПАМЯТЬ*, memory; *СОВѢСТИТЬСЯ*, to have a conscience, from *СОВѢСТЬ*, conscience. These verbs belong to the class of the incomplete simple verbs.

65.—The prepositional verbs, with regard to their delineation, differ among them, according as they are formed from the defective, incomplete, complete or double simple verbs.

1. Those which are derived from a *defective* simple verb, have only the *perfect* aspect, which is purely the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, joined to one of the prepositions above enumerated. Such are:

Пожелать, to wish, I. 1.	Растерять, to lose, I. 3.
Покарать, to chastise, —	Возымѣть, to have, I. 4.
Отмечать, to imagine, —	Завладѣть, to possess, —
Воспылать, to burst into flames, —	Сумѣть, to know, —
Нарыдаться, to wail, —	Оцениться, to whelp, II. 1.
Постараться, to endeavour, —	Остепениться, to grow sedate, —
Ошельмовать, to treat like a rogue, I. 2.	Возгордиться, to be proud of, II. 4.
Возопіять (for <i>взвоніять</i>), to cry out, I. 3.	Пощадить, to spare, —
	Затрепетать, to tremble, II. 7.
	Поблѣкнуть, to fade, III. 1.

Some verbs derived from the defective simple verbs, have also the *imperfect* aspect, which is formed from the iterative aspect, not used in the simple verb and taken in its contracted form, as will be seen later (2. b).

The preceding and the following examples show that the *perfect* aspect of a prepositional verb is formed from the im-

perfect aspect of the simple verb, by the mere joining of a preposition, without any change in the termination of the verb. Further, the infinitive and the imperative from imperfect become *perfect* (стараться, *to endeavour*; старайся, *endeavour*, and постараться, *to use all one's endeavours*; постарайся, *use all your endeavours*); the present (старáюсь, *I endeavour*) becomes a *perfect future* (постарáюсь, *I shall endeavour, I shall use all my endeavours*), and the imperfect preterit (старáлся, *I endeavoured*) becomes a *perfect preterit* (постарáлся, *I have used all my endeavours*).

As the prepositions serve generally to form the perfect preterit and future of the defective simple verbs, custom only can show what is the preposition which a verb takes in order to designate the completion of an action. Thus *за* expresses a beginning; *но*, a part; *до*, the finishing; *от*, the discontinuance; *про*, all the time; *с*, *у*, *за*, *по*, the completion and simultaneousness; *вы*, *из*, *об*, *при*, *пере*, a totality. Е. г. заговорить, *to begin to speak*; поговорить, *to speak a little*; договорить, *to finish speaking*; отговорить, *to leave off speaking*; проговорить, *to pass the time in speaking*; сделать, *to have made*; украсть, *to have stolen*; засмяться, *to have laughed*; покраснеть, *to have blushed*; выходить, исходить, обходить, *to have gone all over*; приесть, *to have eaten all up*; передѣлать, *to have made all*.

2. Derived from the *incomplete* simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have two aspects: 1) the *perfect* aspect, and 2) the *imperfect* aspect, which are formed, the former from the imperfect, and the latter from the iterative aspect of the simple verb, at first without any change in the terminations, at other times with contraction, sometimes even with and without contraction at the same time: occasionally they vary widely from the general rules for the formation of the prepositional verbs. We sometimes find: a quite irregular formation, the want of one of the two aspects perfect or imperfect, the loss or non-existence of the simple verb which has

formed the prepositional verb, and several other irregularities which are mentioned below.

We must remark that in the prepositional verbs the tonic accent remains upon the same syllable as in the simple verb, with exception of the verbs formed with the preposition *бы*, which in the perfect aspect transfer the accent of this preposition. Some monosyllabic verbs, taking a preposition, transfer also, in the preterit of the perfect aspect, the accent to the preposition; as: *умеръ, отперъ, прибылъ, началъ, &c.*, from *умерѣть, to die; отперѣть, to open; прибыть, to arrive; начать, to begin.*

a) The perfect and imperfect aspects of the prepositional verb preserve both the terminations of the imperfect and iterative aspects of the simple verb. Such are:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Уга́даты, to guess, I. 1.	уга́дываты, I. 1.
Обду́маты, to deliberate, —	обду́мываты, —
Отдѣ́лать, to finish, —	отдѣ́лывать, —
Заигра́ть, to play, —	заигрыва́ть, —
Оку́таты, to wrap about, —	оку́тывать, —
Промота́ть, to squander, —	прома́тывать, —
Смѣша́ть, to mingle, —	смѣшива́ть, —
Узна́ть, to recognise, —	узнава́ть, —
Прикова́ть, to chain to, I. 2.	прико́вывать, —
Обрисова́ть, to outline, —	обрисовыва́ть, —
Основа́ть, to found, —	осно́вывать, —
Завоева́ть, to conquer, —	завоёвывать, —
Прогуля́ть, to walk, I. 3.	прогу́ливать, —
Осмѣя́ть, to laugh at, —	осмѣива́ть, —
Усы́ять, to sow, —	усѣва́ть, —
Ослабѣ́ть, to grow weak, I. 4.	ослабѣ́вать, —
Догова́ть, to fast, —	догавли́вать, —
Согрѣ́ть, to warm, —	согрѣ́вать, —
Зажа́рить, to roast, II. 1.	зажа́риваты, —
Усмотре́ть, to discern, —	усма́триваты, —

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Загорѣть, to be sunburnt, II. 1.	загарать, I. 1.
Выкроить, to cut out, —	выкраивать, —
Наклеить, to glue on, —	наклеивать, —
Выстроить, to build, —	выстраивать, —
Отстоять, to defend, —	отстаивать, —
Отпороть, to unrip, —	отпарывать, —
Окормить, to poison, II. 2.	окармливать, —
Выловить, to catch all, —	вылавливать, —
Вытерпеть, to endure, —	вытерпевать, —
Вскипеть, to boil up, —	вскипать, —
Вылечить, to heal, II. 3.	вылечивать, —
Упрочить, to secure, —	упрочивать, —
Заслужить, to deserve, —	заслуживать, —
Умолчать, to keep secret, —	умалчивать, —
Сладить, to arrange, II. 4.	слаживать, —
Показать, to show, —	показывать, —
Привязать, to bind, —	привязывать, —
Заколотить, to knock, II. 5.	заколачивать, —
Вымолотить, to thrash, —	вымалачивать, —
Выплакать, to weep out, —	выплакивать, —
Испросить, to ask, II. 6.	испрашивать, —
Подписать, to subscribe, —	подписывать, —
Вымостить, to pave, II. 7.	вымощивать, —
Взыскать, to exact, —	взыскивать, —
Утопить, to drown, III. 1.	утопать, —
Вытянуть, to stretch, —	вытягивать, —
Увянуть, to wither, —	увядать, —
Загнуть, to bend, —	загибать, —
Всосать, to absorb, —	всасывать, —
Запереть, to shut, III. 2.	запирать, —
Вытереть, to rub out, —	вытирать, —
Умереть, to die, —	умирать, —
Отобрать, to choose out, <i>irr.</i>	отбирать, —
Прибить, to affix, —	прибивать, —
Прилить, to pour to, —	приливать, —
Выпить, to drink out, —	выпивать, —
Зашить, to sew up, —	зашивать, —

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
ВЫМЫТЬ, to wash out, III. 2.	ВЫМЫВАТЬ, I. 1.
Закрѣть, to cover, —	закрѣвать, —
Ужѣться, to settle,	ужѣваться, —
Напѣть, to tune, —	напѣвать, —
Проспѣть, to sleep away, —	проспѣвать, —
Запѣчь, to bake, —	запѣкать, —
Изсѣчь, to cut out, —	изсѣкать, —
Съѣсть, to eat up, —	съѣдѣть, —
Вплести, to plait in, —	вплетѣть, —

b) In the verbs in *umb* of the IId conjugation, the termination of the iterative aspect is often contracted into *ямь*, or into *амь* after a hissing consonant; this happens especially when the simple verb belongs to the class of the defective verbs, that is when the iterative aspect is varying. In this case the tonic accent is placed on the termination. Such are the following verbs:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Обвинѣть, to accuse, II. 1.	обвинѣть, I. 3.
Утолѣть, to appease, —	утолѣть, —
Примириѣть, to reconcile, —	примириѣть, —
Сотвориѣть, to create, —	сотвориѣть, —
Испещриѣть, to variegate, —	испещриѣть, —
Размыслиѣть, to meditate, —	размыслиѣть, —
Умудриѣться, to grow wise, —	умудриѣться, —
Ухищриѣться, to use art, —	ухищриѣться, —
Погубиѣть, to ruin, II. 2.	погубиѣть, —
Утомиѣть, to fatigue, —	утомиѣть, —
Потрафиѣть, to hit, —	потрафиѣть, —
Ослѣпиѣть, to blind, —	ослѣпиѣть, —
Поспѣшиѣть, to hasten, II. 3.	поспѣшиѣть, I. 1.
Совершиѣть, to perfect, —	совершиѣть, —
Означѣть, to denote, —	означѣть, —
Отягчиѣть, to burden, —	отягчиѣть, —

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

Повредить, to damage, II. 4.	повреждать, I. 1.
Побудить, to incite, —	побуждать, —
Приблизить, to draw near, —	приближать, —
Замѣтить, to remark, II. 5.	замѣчать, —
Погасить, to put out, II. 6.	погашать, —
Обольстить, to seduce, II. 7.	обольщать, —
Отомстить, to avenge, —	отмщать, —
Посвятить, to hallow, —	посвящать, —

c) Sometimes in the same verb the imperfect aspect is formed in two ways, with contraction and without contraction. Here we must remark that, if the prepositional verb retains its primitive, simple, physical meaning, the termination of its imperfect aspect is without contraction, and that on the contrary it is contracted, if the prepositional verb takes an abstract, figurative, intellectual acceptation, as is seen in the following examples:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>	1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Разбранить, to scold, II. 1.	разбранивать, I. 1.	& Возбранить, to forbid, I. 1.	возбранять, I. 3.
Запалить, to kindle, —	запалывать, —	& Воспалить, to inflame, —	воспалять, —
Переполнить, to fill, —	перепалнивать, —	& Исполнить, to fulfil, —	исполнять, —
Перестроить, to rebuild, —	перестраивать, —	& Устроить, to arrange, —	устраивать, —
Завострить, to sharpen, —	завастривать, —	& Поострить, to excite, —	поощрять, —
Изловить, to catch, II. 2.	излавливать, —	& Уловить, to surprise, II. 2.	уловлять, —
Подмочить, to wet, II. 3.	подмачивать, —	& Омочить, to steep, II. 3.	омочать, I. 1.
Выучить, to teach, —	выучивать, —	& Научить, to initiate, —	научать, —
Загородить, to fence, II. 4.	загораживать, —	& Оградить, to guard, II. 4.	ограждать, —
Пересудить, to rejudge, —	пересуживать, —	& Осудить, to condemn, —	осуждать, —
Осадить, to plant, —	осаживать, —	& Осадить, to besiege, —	осажать, —
Выпередить, to outgo, —	выперевивать, —	& Предупредить, to prevent, —	предупреждать, —
Вывердить, to rehearse, —	вывёрживать, —	& Утвердить, to affirm, —	утверждать, —
Помутить, to muddy, II. 5.	помучивать, —	& Возмутить, to raise, II. 7.	возмущать, —
Засвѣтить, to light, —	засвѣчивать, —	& Просвѣтить, to enlighten, —	просвѣщать, —
Закрасить, to colour, II. 6.	закрашивать, —	& Украсить, to adorn, II. 6.	украшать, —
Загоститься, to visit, II. 7.	загашиваться, —	& Угостить, to regale, II. 7.	угощать, —

d) The inchoative verbs in *нуть*, which by their nature have not the iterative aspect, take, in the

formation of the imperfect aspect of prepositional verbs, the termination *amb*, e. g.

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Замёрзнуть, to freeze, III. 1.	замерзать, I. 1.
Потухнуть, to go out, —	потухать, —
Погибнуть, to perish, —	погибать, —
Окиснуть, to grow sour, —	окисать, —
Утихнуть, to abate, —	утихать, —
Погаснуть, to go out, —	погасать, —
Озябнуть, to starve, —	озябать, —
Замокнуть, to grow wet, —	замокать, —
Изсохнуть, to dry up, —	изсыхать, —
Издохнуть, to die, —	издыхать, —
Привыкнуть, to habituate, —	привыкать, —
Исчезнуть, to vanish, —	исчезать, —

c) The Russian language has some prepositional verbs, the simple verb of which is no more used or is lost. Such are:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Оправдать, to justify, I. 1.	оправдывать, I. 1.
Обнаро́довать, to publish, I. 2.	обнаро́дывать, —
Затѣять, to devise, I. 3.	затѣвать, —
Одолѣть, to surmount, I. 4.	одолѣвать, —
Укоренить, to root, II. 1.	укоренять, I. 3.
Водворить, to settle, —	водворять, —
Разорить, to ruin, —	разорять, —
Ударить, to strike, —	ударять, —
Повторить, to repeat, —	повторять, —
Истребить, to destroy, II. 2.	истреблять, —
Одушевить, to animate, —	одушевлять, —
Усыновить, to adopt, —	усыновлять, —
Надоумить, to instruct, —	надоумливать, I. 1.
Приложить, to add, II. 3.	прилагать, —
Уничижить, to humble, —	уничижать, —

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>
Уничтѣ́жить, to annul, II. 3.	уничтожа́ть, I. 1.
Воору́жить, to arm, —	воору́жать, —
Вну́шить, to suggest, —	вну́шать, —
Вру́чить, to hand, —	вру́чать, —
Исто́щить, to exhaust, —	исто́щать, —
Соору́дить, to erect, II. 4.	соору́жать, —
Побѣ́дить, to vanquish, —	побѣ́ждать, —
Усла́дить, to delight, —	усла́ждать, —
Пронзѣ́ть, to pierce, —	пронза́ть, —
Оби́дѣть, to offend, —	оби́жать, —
Встрѣ́тить, to meet, II. 5.	встрѣ́чать, —
Отвѣ́тить, to answer, —	отвѣ́чать, —
Воскреси́ть, to revive, II. 6.	воскреша́ть, —
Помѣ́стить, to place, II. 7.	помѣ́щать, —
Поду́стить, to instigate, —	поду́щать, —
Посѣ́тить, to visit, —	посѣ́щать, —
Укρόтить, to appease, —	укро́щать, —
Насы́тить, to satiate, —	насы́щать, —
Защи́тить, to protect, —	защи́щать, —
Дости́гнуть, to reach, III. 1.	достига́ть, —
Воскреси́нуть, to resuscitate, —	воскреса́ть, —
Оку́нуть, to dip, —	оку́нывать, —
Замкнѣ́ть, to lock, —	замы́кать, —
Ушибѣ́ть, to bruise, —	ушиба́ть, —
Просте́рть, to extend, III. 2.	прости́рять, —
Обу́ть, to put shoes, <i>irr.</i>	обу́вать, —
Попра́ть, to trample, —	попи́рать, —
Распя́ть, to crucify, —	распи́нать, —
Нача́ть, to begin, —	начи́нать, —
Отня́ть, to take out, —	отни́мать, —
Отверзти́, to open, —	отверза́ть, —
Обръ́сти, to find out, —	обръ́тать, —
Сче́сть, to count, —	счита́ть, —
Разсвѣ́сти, to grow light, —	разсвѣ́тять, —
Запря́чь, to put to, —	запря́гать, —

Among these verbs there are several which are also used with other prepositions besides those which are above indicated.

f) The following verbs do not form their perfect aspect from the imperfect aspect of the used simple verb, but from some disused aspect of this simple verb.

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

Замѣнить, II. 1 (instead of *замѣнять*). замѣнять, to compensate, I. 3.
 Застрѣлѣть, — (instead of *застрѣлять*). застрѣлѣвать, to shoot, kill, I. 1.
 Вскочить, II. 3 (instead of *вскакать*) . . вскакивать, to leap in, —
 Укусить, II. 6 (instead of *укусать*) . . укусывать, to bite, —
 Возвѣстѣть, II. 7 (instead of *возвѣщать*). возвѣщать, to announce, —
 Поглотить, — (instead of *поглощать*) . поглощать, to swallow up, —

g) Some prepositional verbs are formed irregularly, and occasionally they have two formations, one regular, and the other irregular. Such are:

REGULAR FORMATION.

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

IRREGULAR FORMATION.

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

Презрѣть, to despise, II. 1. . . презрѣть, I. 1	& Обозрѣть, to examine, II. 1. обозрѣвать, I. 1.
Сыскать, to find, II. 7. . . . сыскивать, —	& Снискать, to obtain, II. 7. . снискивать, —
Обуздать, to curb, I. 1. . . . обуздывать, —	& Взнуздать, to bridle, I. 1. . взнуздывать, —
Создать, to build, <i>irr.</i> (созижду) созидать, —	& Создать (созда́тъ), создавать (создаю).
Нагрести, to rake up, <i>irr.</i> нагребать, —	& Погребсти, to bury, <i>irr.</i> . . погребать, I. 1.
Позволить, to permit, II. 1. . . . позволять, I. 3	& Уволить, to discharge, II. 1. увольнять, I. 3.
Осмѣять, to deride, I. 3. . . . осмѣивать, I. 1	& Насмѣяться, to laugh at, I. 3. насмѣхаться, I. 1
Обвязать, to bind, II. 4. . . . обвязывать, —	& Обязать, to oblige, II. 4. . . . обязывать, —
Сравнить, to even, I. 3. . . . сравнивать, —	& Сравнить, to compare, II. 1. сравнивать, —
Принять, to take, <i>irr.</i> (приму) принимать, —	& Вынуть, to take out, III. 1. вынимать, —
Прибѣжать, to run up, <i>irr.</i> прибѣгать, —	& Прибѣгнуть, to resort, III. 1. прибѣгать, —

h) Other prepositional verbs have no perfect aspect and therefore fall into the class of defective simple verbs; such are the following:

Обожать, to adore, I. 1.	Ожидать, to wait, I. 1.
Обладать, to dominate, —	Обитать, to habit, —
Объщать, to promise, —	Опасаться, to fear, —
Завѣщать, to bequeath, —	Обуревать, to agitate, —
Увѣщавать, to exhort, —	Подражать, to imitate, —
Охуждать, to criticize, —	Подобать, to be necessary, —
Осязать, to touch, —	Порицать, to blame, —

Подозрѣвать, to suspect, I. 1.	Ущербляться, to decrease, I. 3.
Сомнѣваться, to doubt, —	Сожалѣть, to take pity, I. 4.
Созерцать, to contemplate, —	Смыслить, to understand, II. 1.
Изобилловать, to abound, I. 2.	Состоять, to consist, —
Наслѣдовать, to inherit, —	Упрямиться, to be obstinate, II. 2.
Повиноваться, to obey, —	Содержать, to maintain, II. 3.
Привѣтствовать, to welcome, —	Предвидѣть, to foresee, II. 4.
Обонять, to scent, I. 3.	Походить, to resemble, —
Упражнять, to occupy, —	Зависѣть, to depend, II. 6.

2) Lastly the following simple verbs have the properties of prepositional verbs, in other words they express the accomplishment of an action without being joined to a preposition and without having the termination of unity in *нѣтъ*. They are called *perfect simple* verbs. Some of them have also the *iterative* aspect.

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	3) <i>Iterative asp.</i>
Благословить, to bless, II. 2. . .	благословлять, I. 3. . .	—
Бросить, to throw, II. 6. . .	бросать, I. 1.	брасывать.
Быть, to be, <i>irr.</i>	бывать, —	бывывать.
Велѣть, to order, II. 1. . .	(велѣть)	велѣвать.
Воротить, to turn, II. 5. . .	ворочать, I. 1.	ворачивать.
Дать, to give, <i>irr.</i>	давать, — (даю)	—
Дѣть, to put, <i>irr.</i>	дѣвать, —	—
Женить, to marry, II. 1. . .	(женить)	—
Казнить, to execute, II. 1. .	(казнить)	—
Кончить, to end, II. 3. . . .	кончать, —	канчивать.
Купить, to buy, II. 2. . . .	(покупать). —	—
Лечь, to lie, <i>irr.</i>	ложиться, II. 3.	—
Лишить, to deprive, II. 3. .	лишать, I. 1.	—
Пасть, to fall, <i>irr.</i>	падать, —	(падать).
Плѣнить, to captivate, II. 1.	плѣнять, I. 3.	—
Простить, to pardon, II. 7. .	прощать, I. 1.	—
Пустить, to let go, — . . .	пускать and пущать, —	—
Ранить, to hurt, II. 1. . . .	(ранить)	—
Родить, to beget, II. 4. . . .	рожать and раждать, —	—

1) Perfect aspect.	2) Imperfect aspect.	3) Iterative asp.
Рѹшѣть, to break down, II. 3. (рѹшить)	рѹшѣть, —	рѹшѣвать.
Рѣшѣть, to decide, II. 3.	рѣшѣть, —	—
Свободѣть, to deliver, II. 4.	свободѣть, —	—
Стать, { to become, <i>irr.</i> становѣться, II. 2.	становѣться, II. 2.	становѣваться.
Стать, { to be sufficient, <i>irr.</i> ставѣть, I. 1. (стаю)	ставѣть, I. 1. (стаю)	—
Ступѣть, to go, II. 2.	ступѣть, —	—
Сѣсть, to sit, <i>irr.</i>	сѣдѣться, II. 4.	—
Хватѣть, to seize, II. 5.	хватѣть, I. 1.	хвачѣвать.
Явѣть, to show, II. 2.	явѣть, I. 3.	—
Ять, to take, <i>irr.</i>	имѣть, I. 1. and II. 2 (имѣю & ѣмлю). —	—

To the list of perfect simple verbs we must add some verbs taken from foreign languages and ending in *овать*, e. g. *атаковѣть*, to attack; *конфисковѣть*, to confiscate, which express both the perfect and imperfect aspects with the same termination and without preposition.

The verbs *велѣть*, *женѣть*, *казнѣть*, *ранѣть* and *рѹшѣть*, do not change their termination to form the perfect and imperfect aspects; the perfect future (*велю*, *женю*, *казню*, *раню* and *рѹшу*) is also used for the present. In the verb *купѣть*, the present and the imperfect preterit are borrowed from the prepositional verb *покупѣть*. The verbs *даровѣть*, to give; *миновѣть*, to pass, and *образовѣть*, to form, as well as the inflections *даровѣль*, *миновѣль* and *образовѣль*, are of the perfect aspect; but the inflections *дарую*, *миную* and *образую* are of the present. The verb *миновѣть* forms its future with *мину*, *минешь*, and the preterit has the two inflections *минуль* and *миновѣль*.

With regard to the perfect simple verbs we remark that in such of them as express a physical action, performed by a single motion (as *бросѣть*, *дать*, *дѣть*, *пасть*, *пустѣть*, *ступѣть*, *хватѣть*, *ять*) the meaning of their perfect aspect is the same as that of the aspect of unity in complete verbs (§ 62).

These perfect simple verbs, with the exception of *благословѣть*, *жеснѣть*, *казнѣть*, *лишѣть*, *ранѣть* and *плѣнѣть*, form also prepositional verbs. Such are:

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>
Забѣть, to forget, <i>irr.</i>	забыва́ть, I. 1.
Повелѣть, to order, II. 1.	повелѣва́ть, —
Разда́ть, to distribute, <i>irr.</i>	раздава́ть, —
Одѣ́ть, to dress, <i>irr.</i>	одѣва́ть, —
Раску́пить, to buy up, II. 2.	раскупа́ть, —
Зале́чь, to hide one's self, <i>irr.</i>	залега́ть, —
Упа́сть, to fall, <i>irr.</i>	упада́ть, —
Распростѣ́ться, to take leave, II. 7. . .	распроща́ться, —
Пропустѣ́ть, to let pass, —	пропуска́ть, —
Уродѣ́ть, to produce, II. 4.	урожа́ть, —
Разру́шить, to destroy, II. 6.	разруша́ть, —
Разрѣ́шить, to decide, —	разрѣша́ть, —
Освободи́ть, to free, II. 4.	освобожда́ть, —
Доста́ть, to procure, <i>irr.</i>	достава́ть, —
Останови́ть, to stop, II. 2.	останавлива́ть, —
Высту́пить, to go out, II. 2.	выступа́ть, —
Засѣ́сть, to sit, <i>irr.</i>	засѣда́ть, —
Изъяви́ть, to indicate, II. 2.	изъявля́ть, I. 3.

The verbs *бро́сить*, *вороти́ть*, *кони́чить* and *хвати́ть* have the two perfect aspects in their prepositional verbs, like those derived from the complete simple verbs, as we shall subsequently see. For the prepositional verbs derived from *ять*, see § 65. 3.

3. Such prepositional verbs as are derived from the *complete* simple verbs, have in addition to the preceding *perfect* and *imperfect* aspects, a second perfect aspect, which, being formed from the aspect of unity of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be performed at one time and by a single movement, whereas the perfect aspect, which is formed from the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be accomplished by various motions, and that occupied or will occupy a certain length of time.

The same remark applies to such prepositional verbs as are formed from certain double verbs, and also from the perfect simple verbs бросить, воротить, кончить and хватить; e. g.

1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>		2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>
a) <i>of duration.</i>	b) <i>of unity.</i>	
Выболтать, I. 1.	выболтнуть, III. 1.	выбáлтывать, to divulge, I. 1.
Накидáть, — .	накинуть, — .	наки́дывать, to heap up, —
Вспорхáть, — .	вспорхнуть, — .	вспáрхивать, to flutter, —
Выпрыгáть, — .	выпрыгнуть, — .	выпры́гивать, to skip out, —
Столкáть, — .	столкнуть, — .	стáлкивать, to push down, —
Захлопáть, — .	захлопнуть, — .	захло́пывать, to shut with a clap, —
Забрызгáть, — .	забрызнуть, — .	забрыз́гивать, to besprinkle, —
Всовáть, I. 2.	всунуть, — .	всо́вывать, to shove in, —
Выклевать, — .	выклонуть, — .	выклё́вывать, to peck out, —
Придавítь, II. 2.	придавнуть, — .	прида́вливать, to press to, —
Окликáть, II. 5.	окликнуть, — .	окли́кать, to call to, —
Сдуть, <i>irr.</i>	сдунуть, — .	сду́вать, to blow off, —
Поджéчь, — .	поджигнуть, — .	поджи́гать, to fire, —
Вывáлять, I. 3.	вывалить, II. 1.	вывáливать, to throw out, —
Прокатáть, I. 1.	прокатить, II. 5.	прока́тывать, to roll through, —
Выломáть, — .	выломить, II. 2.	выла́мывать, to break out, —
Сроня́ть, I. 3.	сронить, II. 1.	сра́нивать, to throw down, —
Вытаскáть, I. 1.	вытащить, II. 3.	выта́скивать, to pull out, —
Забросáть, — .	забросить, II. 6.	забра́сывать, to throw beyond, —
Сворóчать, — .	своротить, II. 5.	сворáчивать, to avert, —
Окончáть, — .	окончить, II. 3.	окáнчивать, to terminate, —
Захватáть, — .	захватить, II. 5.	захва́тывать, to catch, —

The simple verbs говорить, ловить, бить, брать and класть, to indicate an action performed by one movement, borrow their perfect aspect from another verb; as:

1) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i>	2) <i>Perfect aspect.</i>
	a) <i>of duration.</i> b) <i>of unity.</i>
Говорítь, to speak, say, II. 1.	поговори́ть . сказа́ть, II. 4.
Лови́ть, to seize, catch, II. 2.	нзлови́ть . . пойма́ть, I. 1.

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Perfect aspect.*a) *of duration.* b) *of unity.*

Бить, to beat, *irr.* побить . . . ударить, II. 1.
 Брать, to take, *irr.* побрать, . . . взять, *irr.* (возьму).
 Класть, to lay, *irr.* покласть . . . положить, II. 3.

4. From the *double* simple verbs two prepositional verbs are formed, which with their two aspects, the *perfect* and the *imperfect*, have each a particular signification. Such are:

1) From the *definite* verb.2) From the *indefinite* verb.a) *Perfect asp.* b) *Imperfect asp.*Выбрести, *irr.* выбродить, to go out, II. 4.

Выбежать, — выбежать, to flee, I. 1. . . .

Завезти, — . завозить, to bring back, II. 4.

Провести, — . проводить, to conduct, —

Загнать, — загонять, to drive, I. 3.

Выйти, — выходить, to go out, II. 4.

Влететь, II. 5. влетать, to fly in, I. 1. . . .

Донести, *irr.* доносить, to denounce, II. 6.

Вползти, — вползать, to creep in, I. 1.

Выехать, — выезжать, to go out, I. 1.

a) *Perfect asp.*b) *Imperfect asp.*

& Выбродить, II. 4. выбраживать, to ferment, I. 1.

& Выбегать, I. 1. выбегивать, to precede, —

& Завозить, II. 4. заваживать, to transport, —

& Проводить, — . провожать, to accompany, —

& Загонять, I. 3. загонивать, to harass, —

& Выходить, II. 4. выхаживать, to obtain, —

& Перелетать, I. 1. перелетывать, to fly by, —

& Доносить, II. 6. донашивать, to wear out, —

& Отползать, I. 1. отпалзывать, to go away, —

& Выезжать, II. 4. выезживать, to train, —

From the other double verbs are formed prepositional verbs as from the incomplete or complete verbs. The verbs *валить*, *катить*, *ломить*, *ронить* and *тащить* form prepositional verbs with the two perfect aspects of duration and of unity, as we have seen above.

EXERCISES ON THE VERBS.

Regular
verbs.
—
Present.

I do good, as much as I wish. Thou desirest in-
 Я дѣлать добро, сколько я желать. Ты желать

struct thyself. He imagines that he knows all the sciences,
 учиться. Онъ думать что онъ знать весь наука,

and he boasts of his success. We dare not believe in
 и хвастать (*instr.*) свой успѣхъ. Я дерзать не верить (*dat.*)

your words, even when you speak the truth. My neighbours
вашъ слово, хотя ты говорить правда. Мой сосѣдъ

only live on bread, and trust in Providence.
одинъ питаться (*instr.*) хлѣбъ, и уповать на (*acc.*) Провидѣніе.

You trade in cloth, and you ask much.
Ты торговать (*instr.*) сукно, и ты требовать (*gen.*) многое.

The pigeon cooes; the turtle moans; dogs bark; puppies
Голубь ворковать; горлица стонать; собака лаять; щенокъ

yelp; the frog croaks; the raven croaks; the crow caws;
бrehать; лягушка квакать; воронъ гракать; ворона каркать;

lions roar; the stag bells; fowls cluck; the cat
левъ рыкать; олень токовать; курица кудахтать; кошка

mews; oxen bellow; the bee hums; the serpent hisses;
мяукать; быкъ мычать; пчела жужжать; змѣя шипѣть;

eagles scream; nightingales twitter; sheep and lambs
орѣлъ трубѣть; соловей щебетать; овца и ягненокъ

bleat; pigs grunt; the fox yelps; the ass brays; the
блеять; свинья хрюкать; лисица визжать; осѣль реветъ;

turkey gobbles; the quail calls; the cock crows;
калкунъ клохтать; перепелка вавакать; петухъ кукурекать;

the magpie chatters; the parrot prates. The thunder roars;
сорока скрекотать; попугай болтать. Громъ гремять;

water boils; the doors creak; the brooks murmur; the fire
вода кипѣть; дверь скрипѣть; ручей жужжать; огонь

crackles; the stars twinkle; the sun shines; honey-bees
трещать; звезда сверкать; солнце свѣтитъ; пчела

swarm; diamonds sparkle; dry leaves rattle; the wind
роится; алмазъ блестятъ; сухой листь хрустѣтъ; вѣтеръ

whistles; the snow melts. The sun illumines the earth with
свистать; снѣгъ таятъ. Солнце озарять земля (*instr.*)

its rays, warms and vivifies her. The earth turns
 свой лучъ, грѣть и живить онъ. Земля обращаться
 round the sun. You grieve in vain.
 вокругъ (*gen.*) солнце. Ты горевать напрасно.

Preterit. I walked yesterday on the bank of the river, when
 Я гулять вчера по (*dat.*) берегъ рѣкѣ, когда
 the sun was setting. My sister sat under a tree,
 солнце садиться. Мой сестра сидѣть подъ (*instr.*) дерево,
 which was shaken by the wind. Yesterday we worked,
 который качаться (*instr.*) вѣтеръ. Вчера я работать,
 read, wrote and drew much. The sheep perished
 читать, писать и рисовать много. Овца мереть
 through the cold. His mother has been dead a long time.
 отъ (*gen.*) стужа. Онъ мать умереть давно.

The enemies have shut him up in the fortress. This
 Непріятель запереть онъ въ (*prep.*) крѣпость. Этотъ
 man has become blind, and his wife has become deaf. My
 человекъ ослѣпнуть, и онъ женѣ оглохнуть. Мой
 trees have withered, and my flowers have faded.
 дерево высохнуть, и мой цвѣтъ завянуть.

Future. Moscow will shine long at the head of the cities
 Москвѣ красоваться долго во (*prep.*) главѣ городъ
 of Russia. Thou wilt play, and I shall write. The empire
 русскій. Ты играть, и я писать. Государство
 of Russia will develop itself incessantly, and acquire constantly
 Россійскій возвышаться безпрерывно, и приобрѣтать всегда
 more force and glory. A great monarch will never
 болѣе (*gen.*) сила и слава. Великій государь не никогда
 die.
 умереть.

Imperative. Do what thou art bidden, and do not think of resisting.
 Дѣлать что ты говорить, и не думать упрямиться.

Do not lose hope, and trust in God. Go home,

Не терять надежда, и уповать на (acc.) Богъ. Ступать домой,

and do not dispute so much. Do not lose thy time, and

и не толковать столько. Не тратить (gen.) время, и

do not torment the animals. Speak always the truth, and

не мучить (gen.) животное. Говорить всегда правда, и

do not dispute about trifles.

не спорить о (prep.) пустякъ.

The nightingale sings; the horse neighs; the wolf howls. Irregular verbs.

Соловей пѣть; лошадь ржать; волкъ выть.

There are animals which sleep during the whole winter.

Быть зверь, который спать (acc.) весь зима.

Thou takest much upon thyself, and I do not under-

Ты брать много на (acc.) себя, и я не браться

take this affair. How do you crumple this book? Не

за (acc.) этотъ дѣло. Зачѣмъ ты мять этотъ книга. Онъ

lives at Moscow, and is thought to be a rich man.

жить въ (prep.) Москвѣ, и слыть (instr.) богатый человекъ.

The shepherd shears the sheep; the peasants spin the flax

Пастухъ стричь овца; крестьянинъ прясть лёнъ

and weave the linen. He wishes to sleep, and you wish

и ткать холстъ. Онъ хотѣть спать, и ты хотѣть

to play. My neighbour kept me as his own son, and could

играть. Мой сосѣдъ беречь я какъ родной сынъ, и мочь

not part with me. The enemies have burnt several

не разстаться со (instr.) я. Непріятель сжечь много

towns; they were inflamed by hatred and vengeance. The

городъ; онъ увлечься (instr.) злоба и мщеніе.

shepherd pastured the sheep in the meadow. I will send

Пастухъ пастіи овца на (prep.) лугъ. Я послать

for the doctor, and thou wilt send me money. This

за (instr.) лѣкарь, и ты прислать я (gen.) деньги. Этотъ

town is flourishing, and it will flourish long through its
 го́родъ цвѣсти, и онъ цвѣсти́ до́лго (*instr.*)

strength and wealth. I will give thee a book, and thou, what
 сила и богатство. Я да́ть ты кни́га, и ты что

wilt thou give me? Thou canst not say: what will he give
 да́ть я? Ты мо́жешь не говори́ть: что онъ да́ть

me for that? Do not take upon thyself,
 я за (*acc.*) э́тотъ? Не брать на (*acc.*) себя́ (*gen.*) то́тъ (*gen.*)

what thou canst not perform. Children, live in peace, do not
 что ты мо́жешь не испо́лнить. Дѣтя́, жить жи́рно, не

swear, never lie, and behave yourselves well.

кля́сться, не ни́когда́ лгать, и вести́ себя́ хороше́нко.

Definite and
 indefinite
 imperfect
 aspect.

Beasts walk and run, birds and flies fly, fishes

Звѣрь ходи́ть и бѣ́гать, пти́ца и му́ха лета́ть, ры́ба

swim, and worms crawl. See, a soldier is coming

пла́вать, и червь по́лзать. Посмотрѣ́ть, солда́тъ иди́

here; behind him runs a dog. Thou seest, how this

сю́да; за (*instr.*) онъ бѣ́жать соба́ка. Видѣ́ть, какъ э́тотъ

swallow flies fast; they fly always so. This mariner

ла́сточка лета́ть бы́стро; онъ лета́ть все́гда́ такъ. Сей моря́къ

has long sailed on the Black Sea. What is swimming

до́лго пла́вать по (*dat.*) Чѣ́рный Мо́ре. Что плы́ть

there on the water? The wives of the Slavonians carried

тамъ на (*prep.*) вода́? Же́на́ Сла́вянини́ носи́ть

water and fetched wood. What dost thou carry in

вода́ и таска́ть дрова́. Что ты нести́ въ (*prep.*)

this bag? See, what a heap of wood this

э́тотъ мѣ́шокъ? Смотри́ть, како́й вяза́нка дрова́ э́тотъ

man is drawing. One saw then what one had not

чело́вѣкъ таска́ть. Видѣ́ть тогда́ (*gen.*) что не

seen for a long time.

видѣ́ть до́лго́.

The enemy dashed into the town and seized the Perfect aspect of duration and of unity.
 Непріятель рѣяться въ (acc.) городъ и кидаться на (acc.)

booty. It began to lighten. It lightened, there was a
 корысть. Засверкать молнія. Сверкать молнія, гремѣть

violent clap of thunder, the earth trembled, the church
 сильный громъ, земля дрожать, церковь

was shaken. My brother went to bed, and began to snore.
 затрясаться. Мой братъ лечь и захрапѣть.

He gave a loud snore and awoke. May I hope, that
 Храпѣть громко и просыпаться. Мочь я надѣяться, что

my lyre will touch once more your hard heart? The sun
 мой лира трогать ещё вашъ хладный сердце? Солнце

began to shine, but not for a long time; it shone for a moment
 заблистать, но не надолго; блестѣть

and disappeared. We have thrown out of the window all
 и скрываться. Я выбрасывать за (acc.) окно весь

the sweepings; among the sweepings we have thrown out
 соръ; въ (prep.) соръ я выбрасывать

also a paper of importance.

и бумага важная.

Last year I often went to the town. Socrates Iterative aspect.
 (gen.) Прѣшлый годъ я ходить въ (acc.) городъ. Сократъ

was accustomed to say. The Germans had long inhabited
 говорить. Нѣмецъ издавна жить

Novgorod. When living at Moscow, I
 въ (prep.) Нѣвгородъ. Жить въ (prep.); Москвѣ, я

often went to the monastery of the Trinity. In my youth
 ѣздить въ (acc.) Лавра Троицкій. Въ (acc.) молодой лѣто

I often lived in the country.

я жить въ (prep.) деревня.

If the stones could speak, they would teach thee Conditional and Sub-junctive.
 Если бы камень мочь говорить, онъ научить бы ты

prudence. If any one had come to us (*gen.*) острѣжность. * Ежели бы кто нибѣдь войти къ (*dat.*) я at this moment, he would have seen us in despair въ (*acc.*) этотъ мнѣнта, онъ увидѣть бы я въ (*prep.*) отчаяніе, and would have heard our groans and our sighs. There и услышать бы нашъ стenanіе и нашъ вздохъ. Есть are few things in the world, on which I мало (*gen.*) предметъ въ (*prep.*) свѣтъ, на (*acc.*) который я have not fixed my attention. There was no heart не обращать бы (*gen.*) вниманіе. Быть (*gen.*) не сердце so insensible that it did not melt into tears. такой каменный, который не изливаться бы въ (*prep.*) слеза.

The differ-
ent tenses
and aspects.

This soldier has served long and has received for his service a pension. It is not every soldier that will obtain *Этотъ солдатъ служить долго и выслуживать пенсію. Не всякій выслуживать* it with such distinction. He was in many battles and distinguished himself everywhere by his *онъ съ (*instr.*) такой отличіе. Онъ быть въ (*prep.*) много* *сраженіе, и отличаться вездѣ (*instr.*) блиста-* markable courage. He distinguished himself particularly *тальный храбрость. Онъ отличаться особенно* at the capture of a battery of the enemies. He mounted *при (*prep.*) взятіе баттарей непріятельскій. Онъ взобраться* first on the parapet, killed the hostile soldier, and *первый на (*acc.*) брѣстерь, убивать непріятельскій солдатъ, и* captured a cannon. For that he was rewarded by a *взять пушка. За (*acc.*) это онъ награждать (*instr.*)* decoration. Afterwards he was rewarded also with other *орденъ. Потомъ онъ награждать и (*instr.*) другой* marks of distinction. Now he will return to his country, *отличіе. Теперь онъ отправляться въ (*acc.*) родина,*

will establish himself with his family, and will relate
 поселя́ться въ (*prep.*) сво́ей семье́, и разска́зывать о (*prep.*)
 his campaigns, how he marched against the Turks and
 сво́ей похóдь, какъ ходи́ть на (*acc.*) Ту́рокъ и
 the French, how he beat the enemy, how he endured hunger,
 Францу́зъ, какъ бить врагъ, какъ терпе́ть го́лодь,
 suffered from his wounds, and consoled himself with the
 страда́ть отъ (*gen.*) ра́на, и утыша́ться (*instr.*)
 thought that he is serving his sovereign with heart and
 мыслъ, что онъ служи́тъ (*dat.*) сво́ей Госуда́рь (*instr.*) се́рдце и
 soul. Trust in me.
 ду́ша. Упова́ть на (*acc.*) я.

THE PARTICIPLE.

66.—The *participles* (прича́стiя) have, as a part of the verb (§ 53) *voice*, *aspect* and *tense*, and, as adjectives, that they may agree with their substantive, they have *gender*, *number* and *case*. As regards voice, they are *active* or *neuter* (or, with the pronoun *ся*, pronominal) and *passive*. They have the same number of aspects as the verbs whence they are derived, but they have only two tenses, the *present* and *preterit*.

Division of
the parti-
ciples.

67.—The *active* and *neuter* (as also the pronominal) participles are formed as follows:

Active and
neuter par-
ticiples.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the third person plural of the present indicative by changing the termination *мъ* into *щiй* (neut. *щее*, fem. *щая*), and this without any exception; e. g. дѣлающiй,

making; любящій, *loving*; кричащій, *crying*; несущій, *bearing* (from дѣлаютъ, любятъ, кричатъ, несутъ).

2. The *preterit* or past participle is formed from the preterit indicative, by changing *лз* into *вшій*, and *з* (in such verbs as have not *лз* in the preterit) into *шій* (neut. *ше*, fem. *шя*); e. g. дѣлавшій, *having made*; носившій, *having borne*; поту́хшій, *being extinguished*; трё́шій, *having rubbed* (from дѣла^лз, нос^илз, поту́хз, трё́з). An exception to this rule is found in some irregular verbs in *бу* and *му*, which, though forming their preterit in *лз*, change *у* of the present (or of the future) into *шій*; these are: блю́дшій, *having kept*; ве́дшій, *having lead*; па́дшій (and па́вшій), *having fallen*; прядшій, *having spun*; плётшій, *having plaited*; метшій, *having swept*; обрѣ́тшій, *having found*; цвѣ́тшій, *having flowered* (from блю́ду, ве́ду, па́ду, пряду́, плету́, мету́, обрѣ́ту and цвѣ́ту), and also увя́дшій, *being faded*; шѣ́дшій, *having gone*; чѣ́тшій, *having counted* (from увяну́, иду́ and чту́).

Passive
participles.

68.—The *passive* participles, which are only formed from active verbs, are used both with the full and the apocopated termination, ending: *a*) in the *present*, in *емый*, *имый* or *омый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *емз*, *имз* or *омз* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination, *b*) in the *preterit*, in *нный* or *тый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *нз* or *мз* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the first person plural of the present indicative, by chang-

ing the termination *мѣ* into *мый*, as: *дѣлаемый*, *being made*; *любимый*, *being loved* (from *дѣлаемѣ* and *любимѣ*). But *движу*, *I move*, and *борю*, *I conquer*, from *движимый* and *боримый* (instead of *движемый* and *боремый*). The irregular verbs with the first person in *ѣмѣ* (i. e. with the accent), have *омый*, resuming the guttural consonant; e. g. *зовомый*, *being called*; *трясомый*, *being shaken*; *берегомый*, *being kept*; *пекомый*, *being baked* (from *зовѣмѣ*, *трясѣмѣ*, *бережѣмѣ*, *печѣмѣ*), and in like manner *сосомый*, *being sucked*; *искомый*, *being sought* (from *сосѣмѣ* and *ищемѣ*).

2. The *preterit* participles is formed of the preterit of the indicative by changing *лѣ* of the terminations *алѣ*, *ялѣ* and *плѣ*, into *нный* with permutation of the commutable consonants or with intercalation of the consonant *л*, as also in the first person of the present; *лѣ* and *ѣ* of the terminations *олѣ*, *нулѣ* and *ѣ*, into *тый*; e. g. *дѣланный*, *done*; *разсѣянный*, *dispersed*; *видѣнный*, *seen*; *палѣнный*, *burnt*; *явлѣнный*, *shown*; *винчѣнный*, *screwed*; *колѣтый*, *pricked*; *двинутый*, *moved*; *тѣртый*, *rubbed* (from *дѣлалѣ*, *разсѣялѣ*, *видѣлѣ*, *палѣлѣ*, *явлѣлѣ*, *винтилѣ*, *колѣлѣ*, *двинулѣ*, *тѣрѣлѣ*).

The passive participles of the irregular verbs, which also present some irregularities in their formation, have been given in the List of the irregular verbs, pages 138—141.

69.—The participles, being used as adjectives, and as such agreeing with their substantive in gender, number and case, are declined like the qualifying adjectives (§ 40, parad. 4). The active and neuter participles are only used in the full ter-

Declension
of the
participles.

mination, while the passive participles are used both in the full and the apocopated.

Passive
verbs.

70.—The passive participles, both present and preterit, with the apocopated termination, joined to the auxiliary verb *быть*, form what is called the passive verb (страдательные глаголы); e. g. сынъ (*есть*) любимъ своимъ отцемъ, *the son is loved by his father*; ученикъ былъ награжденъ за прилежаніе, *the scholar has been rewarded for his assiduity*. We have here to remark that from the present and preterit of the passive participles are formed two aspects of the passive verb: the imperfect and the perfect aspect. As regards the present, preterit and future tenses, they are determined by the auxiliary verb *быть*, as seen below.

	1) <i>Imperfect asp.</i>	2) <i>Perfect asp.</i>
1. <i>Present:</i> . . я (<i>есмь</i>) награждаемъ.	я (<i>есмь</i>) награждёнъ.	
2. <i>Preterit:</i> . . я былъ награждаемъ.	я былъ награждёнъ.	
3. <i>Future:</i> . . я буду награждаемъ.	я буду награждёнъ.	

EXERCISES ON THE PARTICIPLES.

Active and
neuter par-
ticiples.

The man who loves truth, hates falsehood. The child
 Человѣкъ любить правда, ненавидѣть ложь. Дитя
 that bathes; the dog that attacks passers by. The
 купаться; собака бросаться на (*acc.*) прохожіи.
 tradesman who received the goods from London,
 Купецъ, получать товаръ изъ (*gen.*) Лондонъ,
 sold them advantageously. The tradesman who has received
 продавать онъ выгодно. Купецъ получить
 the goods from London, has sold them advantageously.
 товаръ изъ (*gen.*) Лондонъ, продать онъ выгодно.

Suffering from illness, he seeks relief. Light
Страда́ть (*instr.*) боле́знь, иска́ть (*gen.*) обле́гче́нiе. Заже́чь

the candle which has gone out, and wipe the window
свѣ́ча поту́хнуть, и вы́тереть сте́кло

which is frozen. Glory to the hero who has saved his
замёрзнуть. Сла́ва геро́й спасти́ свой

country. The roaring lion, the bellowing ox, the barking
оте́чество. Рыка́ть левъ, мыча́ть быкъ, ла́ять

dog, the crowing cock, the cooing dove, express their
соба́ка, пѣть пету́хъ, воркова́ть го́лубъ, выража́ть свой

feelings and wants.

чу́ство и жела́нiе.

The sea agitated by the winds frightens the sailors. Passive
participles.
Мо́ре, волнова́ть вѣтръ, устраша́ть плыве́ць.

The daughter beloved by her father, seeks to deserve his
До́чь, любя́ть оте́ць, иска́ть заслужи́вать онъ

love. One must succour the unfortunate man, harassed
любо́вь. До́лжно помога́ть (*dat.*) несчастный, гна́ть

by fate and pursued by disasters. This is skimmed milk,
судьба́ и преслѣ́довать неуда́ча. Э́тотъ сня́ть молоко́,

and here is rappee snuff. It is a loaded gun. In the
и вотъ терѣ́ть таба́къ. Э́тотъ заряди́ть ружьё. На (*prep.*)

market they sell killed geese, tarred ropes, little
рыно́къ продава́ться би́ть гусь, смоли́ть верёвка, откорми́ть

sucking pigs, and shorn sheep.

поро́сёнокъ и стри́чь овца́.

Russia is inhabited by various nations. Good sovereigns Passive
verbs.
Росси́я обита́ть (*instr.*) мно́го наро́дъ. До́брый госуда́рь

are loved by their subjects and respected by their neighbours.

любя́ть свой по́дданный и уважа́ть сосе́дь.

The Tartars have been vanquished and defeated in the
Татари́нъ побѣди́ть и разби́ть на (*prep.*)

plains of Koulikof. Thy labours will be crowned with
 поле Куликовъ. Твой трудъ увѣнчать (*instr.*)

success. Nouns are declined, and verbs conjugated. This
 успѣхъ. Имя склонять и глаголь спрягать. Сей

great captain will be revered by posterity. Moscow
 великій полковѣдецъ чтить въ (*prep.*) потомство. Москвѣ

has been devastated and burnt by the enemies. This gun
 разорить и сжечь врагъ. Этотъ ружьё

is charged. This book is well bound.
 зарядить. Этотъ книга прекрасно переплетать.

THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND.

Division of
 the adverbs.

71.—The *adverbs* (нарѣчія) are divided into different classes according to their meaning:

1. Adverbs of *quality* or *manner* (нарѣчія качествъ), e. g. такъ, *thus*; иначе, *otherwise*; хорошо, *well*; худо, *badly*; нарѣчно, *intentionally*; скоро, *quickly*; напрасно, *in vain*; наугадъ, *at random*; заодно, *by agreement*; по-своему, *in one's own way*, &c.

2. Adverbs of *time* (временн), e. g. вчера, *yesterday*; сегодня, *to-day*; завтра, *to-morrow*; утромъ, *in the morning*; вечеромъ, *in the evening*; нынѣ, *now*; теперѣ, *at present*; тогда, *then*; послѣ, *afterwards*; прежде, *before*; иногда, *sometimes*; тотчасъ, *presently*, &c.

3. Adverbs of *place* (мѣста): *a*) such as indicate a place without motion: здѣсь, *here*; тамъ, *there*; нигдѣ, *nowhere*; дома, *at home*; вездѣ, *everywhere*; *b*) such as indicate the place to which the action

is directed: *сюда, hither; туда, thither; нигуда, nowhere; домой, home; всюду, everywhere; c)* such as indicate the place whence the action proceeds; e. g. *отсюда, from here; оттуда, from there; извне, from without; снаружн, from the exterior; отсюду, from all sides, &c.*

4. Adverbs of *order* (порядка); e. g. *во-первыхъ, firstly; во-вторыхъ, secondly; потомъ, subsequently, &c.*

5. Adverbs of *quantity* (количества); e. g. *достаточно, enough; мало, little; много, much; нѣсколько, some, &c.*

6. *Implicit* (замѣнительныя) adverbs, as: *да, yes; нѣтъ, no; молъ, де, says he, &c.*

7. *Interrogative* (вопросительныя) adverbs; e. g. *когда, when? доколѣ, how long? гдѣ, where (without motion)? куда, where (with motion)? откуда, whence? сколько, how much? зачѣмъ, why? &c.*

72.—Adverbs are for the most part derivatives, being formed from nouns, adjectives, pronouns or verbs. Nouns in the instrumental and other cases are often employed adverbially: e. g. *крѣгомъ, in a circle; верхомъ, on horseback; даромъ, gratis; на показъ, for show; въ торопяхъ, in haste, &c.* Every qualifying adjective, in the apocopated termination of the neuter gender, can become an adverb, as: *окрасить блѣло, синѣ, to dye white, blue; поступать хорошо, to conduct himself well.* The possessive and circumstantial adjectives form adverbs of manner by means of the preposition *по*, as: *по-человѣчн, as a man; по-руски, in Russian;*

Formation
of the ad-
verbs.

по-дру́жески, *as a friend*; по-звѣ́рному, *like beasts*; по-мо́ему, *according to my view*.

Degrees of
comparison.

73.—The adverbs formed from qualifying adjectives admit of degrees of comparison; e. g. у́мно, *wisely*, and у́мнѣе, *more wisely*; хоро́шо, *well*, and лѹ́чше, *better*; по́корко, *humbly*, and всепоко́рнѣйше, *very humbly*. We must here remark that the comparative of the adverbs is the same as that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination, with the exception of the five adverbs: бо́лѣе, *more*; ме́нѣе, *less*; до́лѣе, *longer*; да́лѣе, *further*; то́нѣе, *more finely*, which must be distinguished from the adjectives бо́льше, *greater*; ме́ньше, *less*; до́льше, *longer*; да́льше, *more distant*; то́ньше, *finer*. The qualifying adverbs can also be used in the diminutive and augmentative aspects; e. g. си́невато, *bluishly*; ма́ленько, *a little*; не́мно́жко, *not much*; похѹ́же, *a little worse*; преу́мно, *very wisely*.

Gerunds.

74.—The *gerunds* (дѣеприча́стія) are nothing but *verbal adverbs* formed from active or neuter participles. They have two terminations in each of the two tenses, viz: *a*) in the *present*, я or (after a hissing letter) а, and ючи or учи, e. g. дѣ́лая and дѣ́лаяючи, *in doing*; ды́ша and ды́шаючи, *in breathing*; не́ся and не́сяючи, *in bearing*; *b*) in the *preterit*, вѣ and вши; e. g. дѣ́лавъ and дѣ́лавши, *after having done*; проси́въ and проси́вши, *having prayed*, remarking however that verbs which have not the letter л in the preterit, have only the termination ши, e. g. уме́рши, *being dead*; поту́хши, *being*

extinguished. The same is the case with the pronominal verbs; e. g. *учи́вшись, after having learned; возврати́вшись, having returned.*

The full terminations of the gerunds *ючи* and *вши* are more commonly employed in familiar language, while the apocopated termination *я* and *въ* are more usual in the written tongue.

EXERCISES ON THE ADVERBS AND THE GERUNDS.

Come here, for I live here. Where is your brother? Adverbs.
Пойти́ сюда́, ибо я жить здѣсь. Гдѣ вашъ братъ?

He is not at home. Where did he go yesterday evening?
Онъ нѣтъ дома. Куда онъ поѣхалъ вчера вѣчеромъ?

Thou judgest wisely, and thy brother judges more wisely. I
Ты суди́ть умно́, а твой братъ . Я

walk quick, and thou walkest quicker. You speak Russian
ходи́ть шибко, а ты . Ты говори́шь по-ру́ски

purely, and your sister speaks it more purely. To-morrow
чи́сто, а вашъ сестри́ца . За́втра

we shall go very far, and in a year we shall go still
я поѣхалъ о́чень далѣко, а чрезъ (*acc.*) годъ ещё

further. Thou singest well, but she sings better. I beg
. Ты пѣть хорошо́, но онъ . Я проси́ть

you very earnestly. I thank you very humbly.
ты уба́дительно. Я благодари́ть ты по́корно.

While walking on the bank of the river, I enjoy Gerunds.

Гуля́ть на (*prep.*) бе́регъ рѣ́кы, я наслажда́ться

the freshness of the evening. While pitying the unfortunate,
(*instr.*) прохлáда вѣ́черъ. Жалѣ́ть о (*prep.*) несча́стный,

try to aid them. I instruct you, because I wish
стара́ться помога́ть онъ. Я учи́ть ты, жела́ть

you well, and because I hope, that you will make progress
ты (*gen.*) добро́, и надѣяться, что ты успѣвать

in the sciences. When thou dost not know how to do
въ (*prep.*) нау́ка. Не уме́ть дѣлать (*gen.*)

a thing, ask advice without blushing. Do right,
что нибу́дь, проси́ть (*gen.*) совѣтъ, не красне́ть. Дѣлать добро́,

without fearing any man. One must not eat when
не боя́ться (*gen.*) ни́кто. Дóлжно не ѣсть

lying down. In serving our country, and dying for
лежа́ть. Служи́ть (*dat.*) оте́чество, и умира́ть за (*acc.*)

it, we do our duty. Having received your letter, and
онъ, я исполня́ть свой до́лгъ. Получи́ть вашъ пи́сьмо́, и

having learned what you want, I have answered imme-
узна́ть (*gen.*) что ты жела́ть, я отвѣча́ть немé-

diately. After having dined, stop at home. Having
дленно. Отобѣда́ть, остава́ться до́ма. Напи-

written your letter, I placed it in an envelope, and
са́ть пи́сьмо́, положи́ть въ (*acc.*) кувѣ́ртъ, и

sealed it, put it in the post. Having returned
запеча́тать, отдава́ть онъ на (*acc.*) почта́. При́йти

home, I set about writing. After being married, he repaired
домо́й, я съе́сть пи́сать. Жени́ться, онъ по́ехать

to the country. Having remained an hour with him,
въ (*acc.*) дере́вня. Просидѣ́ть (*acc.*) часъ у (*gen.*) онъ,

I returned home; after undressing myself and going to bed,
я по́йти домо́й; раздѣва́ться и лечь,

I fell asleep immediately.

я усну́ть ско́ро.

THE PREPOSITION.

75.—The *prepositions* (предлоги) of the Russian language are *simple* (безъ, на, по) or *compound* (изъ-за́, изъ-пóдъ); the following is a general list of them: Division of the prepositions.

Безъ (безо), without.	Отъ (ото), from; since; out of.
Вз- or воз- (взо), up. <i>sus-</i> .	По (па-), about; until; after.
Въ (во), in, into, to, at.	Подъ (подо-), under, underneath.
Вы-, out, without, <i>ex-</i> .	Пра-, (<i>indicating a removed relationship</i> ; прадѣтъ, <i>great grandfather</i>).
Для, for.	Пре- or пере-, beyond, <i>trans-</i> ; <i>re-</i> .
До, as far as, until.	Предъ or передъ (предо), before.
За, behind; after; for.	При, near; in the time of.
Изъ (изо), from.	Про, of, about.
Изъ-за́, from behind.	Рáди, for the sake of.
Изъ-пóдъ, from under.	Раз- or роз- (разо), apart, <i>se-</i> .
Къ (ко), to, towards; for.	Сквозъ, through.
На, on; against.	Съ (со, съ-), since; about; with.
Надъ (надо), upon, over.	У, at; by, near. [ing.]
Низ- (низо-), down, <i>de-</i> .	Чрезъ or чéрезъ, through; dur-
О or объ (обо), of; round; against.	

The following adverbs also belong to the class of prepositions:

Близъ, near.	О́коло, round; about.
Вдоль, along.	О́крестъ, around.
Вмѣсто, instead of.	Опрічь, except, excepting.
Внутрь <i>and</i> внутри, within.	Повѣрхъ, upon, above.
Внѣ, out of, without.	Пóдлѣ, beside.
Возлѣ, beside.	Позади <i>and</i> позáдъ, behind.
Вопрекі, against, in spite of.	Пóслѣ, after.
Крóмѣ, besides, except.	Прѣжде, before.
Мѣжду <i>or</i> межъ, between, among.	Прóтивъ <i>or</i> протіву, against.
Мімо, past, by.	Сверхъ, above; besides.
Назадѣ, behind.	Сзáди <i>or</i> созадѣ, from behind.
Насупротівъ, opposite.	Средѣ <i>and</i> средъ, in the middle.

Certain adverbs, formed from qualifying adjectives, are also used as prepositions; e. g. *относительно*, *in reference to*; *касательно*, *concerning*. The same is the case with certain gerunds, as: *исключая*, *excepting*; *не смотря на*, *not withstanding*, and also some nouns in different cases, as: *въ разсужденіи*, *in consideration of*; *посредствомъ*, *by means of*, &c.

76—The prepositions in every language have a twofold use. In the first place they are used, as prefixes, in the formation of the different parts of speech, of which they become an integral part; e. g. *безуміе*, *absurdity*; *взглядъ*, *look*, *западъ*, *the west*; *обольщать*, *to seduce*; *насынокъ*, *the son-in-law*; *правнукъ*, *the great-grand-son*; *сумерки*, *twilight*; *чрезвычайный*, *extraordinary*, &c. Secondly, as particles of speech, they are placed before nouns and pronouns to indicate the relations of the objects; e. g. *человѣкъ безъ ума*, *a man without talent*; *просьба до судьи*, *a request to the judge*; *письмо къ другу*, *a letter to a friend*; *сказка о лисѣцѣ*, *the tale of the fox*, &c.

These examples show that some prepositions are used conjointly and separately, while others of them can only be employed in one of these ways. Such as are only used *separately*, are: *для*, *къ* (*ко*), *ради*, *сквозь*, *изъ-за* and *изъ-подъ*. Such as are only used *conjointly*, are: *въ* (*воз*, *взо*), *вы*, *низ* (*низо*), *на*, *пра*, *пре* (*пере*), *раз* (*роз*, *разо*) and *съ*, and for this reason are called *inseparable* prepositions. All the other prepositions may be used both conjointly and separately.

77.—The separable prepositions require the complementary word to be put in a certain case. Thus: Government of the prepositions.

Безъ, для, до, изъ, изъ-за, изъ-подъ, отъ, ради and у, as well as almost all the adverbs used prepositionally, require the *genitive*.

Къ and the adverb вопреки require the *dative*.

Про, сквозь and чрезъ govern the *accusative*.

Надъ requires the *instrumental*, as does also the adverb между or межъ, though used occasionally with the *genitive*.

При governs the *prepositional*.

За, подъ and предъ require the *accusative*, when they indicate motion towards an object, and the *instrumental* when they design repose.

Въ, на and о or объ govern the *accusative*, when they indicate a change of place, and the *prepositional*, when there is no motion indicated from one place to another.

Съ governs the *genitive*, the *accusative* and the *instrumental*. With the *genitive* it means *from*, *since*; with the *accusative*, *as*, *about*, *of the size of*, and with the *instrumental*, *with*.

По requires the *dative*, the *accusative* and the *prepositional*. With the *dative* it signifies *about*; with the *accusative*, *as far as*, and with the *prepositional*, *after*.

EXERCISES ON THE PREPOSITIONS.

Without hope it is impossible to live in the world. From
 Безъ надежда нельзя жить въ свѣтъ. Отъ
 the river to the forest there are two versts. Of what are you
 рѣка до лѣсъ (есть) два верста. О что ты

talking? We labour for the public good. Between the
говори́ть? Я труди́ться для о́бщій блага́. Ме́жду

house and the garden there is a large court with stables.
до́мъ и садъ (*есть*) простран́ный дво́рь съ коню́шня.

For God's sake do not grieve. The love of the sovereign
Ради́ Богъ не уныва́ть. Любо́вь къ госуда́рь

and of one's native land. He lives at his uncle. The soldier
и оте́чество. Онъ жи́ть у сво́ей дядя́. Солда́тъ

started from behind the bush. The ray of the sun passes
вы́скочитъ изъ-за́ ку́стъ. Лучъ со́лнечный прои́нкать

through the water. This man is at death's door.
сквозь вода́. Э́тотъ чело́вѣкъ (*есть*) при сме́рти.

The bird flies under the clouds. I have put the book under
Пти́ца лета́ть подъ о́блако. Я положи́ть кни́га подъ

the table. Sit down to table and remain at table. My
сто́лъ. Садит́ся за сто́лъ и сидѣ́тъ за сто́лъ. Мой

brother starts for Moscow, because his wife lives at
братъ ѣхатъ въ Москв́а, пото́му что онъ жена́ жи́ть въ

Moscow. The eagle is perched on the tree. This glass
Москв́а. Орёлъ сидѣ́тъ на дере́во. Э́тотъ рво́мка

has been broken into several pieces. I am angry with my
разбива́ться на ме́лкій часть. Я доса́довать на мой

brother for his laziness. Never mind the affairs of others.
братъ за онъ ле́ность. Не заботи́ться о дѣ́ло чужо́й.

My friend has wounded himself against the corner of the table.
Мой дру́гъ ушиба́ться объ у́голь сто́лъ.

The water runs from the roof. Here are trees with leaves,
Вода́ течётъ съ кро́вля. Вотъ дере́во съ листь,

but without blossoms. This dog will be of the size of
но безъ цвѣ́тъ. Э́тотъ соба́ка бы́ть съ

a cow. The children run about the court and about the
коро́ва. Дѣ́тя бѣ́гать по дво́рь и по

garden. We worked from the first to the fifth of August.
садъ. Я рабѣтатъ отъ пѣрвыи по пѣтый числѣ А'вгустъ.

He wears mourning for his brother.
Онъ носить трауръ по свой братъ.

THE CONJUNCTION.

78.—The following is a general list of the Russian *conjunctions* (союзы).

А, and; but.	Не только . . . но, и, not only
Буде, if, provided.	. . . . but even.
Будто, будто бы, that, as if.	Нежели, than.
Впроче́мъ, as for the rest.	Ни, ни́жé, neither, nor; not
Да, and, but; let.	Но, but. [even.
Дабы́, that, in order that.	Одна́ко, however.
Для того́ что, because.	Посему́, then.
Ежели <i>and</i> е́сли, if, in case,	Потому́ что, because.
when.	Пра́вда, it is true.
Же <i>or</i> жъ, then, also.	Пуска́й <i>or</i> пусть, let.
И, and; also, too.	Сколь ни, whatever.
Ибо́, because.	Слѣдовательно, consequently,
Или́ <i>or</i> иль, or.	То, then. [then.
И такъ, therefore.	Того́ ра́ди, therefore.
Какъ, as, when.	То́лько <i>and</i> то́кмо, only, merely.
Ка́къ-то, for instance.	Хотя́, though, although.
Когда́, when, whenever.	Хотя́ бы, even though.
Ли́ <i>or</i> ль (<i>interrogative</i>); if,	Что, that.
whether.	Чтобы́ <i>or</i> что́бъ, that, in order
Ли́бо, either, or.	that.
Ли́шь, just, as soon as.	Чѣмъ, than.

There are other parts of speech which perform the office of conjunctions; such are the relative pronouns: кто, что, кото́рый, кой, *who, which*; чей, *whose*; како́й, *which*; the interrogative adverbs: гдѣ, куда́, *where*; отку́да, *whence*; доко́лѣ, *how long*; ско́лько, сколь, *how much*; and others: такъ,

thus; пока́, as much as; тѣмъ . . . чѣмъ, so much the more . . . that; чѣмъ тѣмъ, the more . . . the more; ча́стію, in part, &c.

EXERCISES ON THE CONJUNCTIONS.

My uncle was born and lived at Moscow, and not at Tver.

Мой дѣдя родѣтся и жить въ Москвѣ, а не въ Тверь.

Do you know that our tutor is indisposed? If you do
Знать ли что нашъ учитель нездоровый? Ежели ты

not come I shall be angry. Ask him if he
не прѣзжать, то я осердѣтся. Спросить у онъ, ли онъ

will come, or if he has the intention to stop at home. Не
хотѣтъ ѣхать, или вознамѣрится оставаться дома. Онъ

distresses himself more about his brother than about his sister.

забѣтится болѣе о брать, нежели о сестра.

It is more agreeable to do good to others, than to receive

Пріятно дѣлать добро другой, чѣмъ получать
benefits one's self. Let him come; let them go.
благотвореніе самъ. Пусть онъ прійти; пускай онъ уѣхать.

Do not let the sun find you on your bed. Long live

Не да солнце заставать ты на ложе. Да здравствовать
the Tzar. The more thou learnest diligently, the more study will

Царь. Чѣмъ ты учишься прилѣжно, тѣмъ ученіе быть
be easy to thee.

лѣгкій для ты.

THE INTERJECTION.

79.—The principal *interjections* (междомѣтія) of the Russian language are the following: ура! га! expressing *joy*; ахъ! охъ! увы! ахтѣ! expressive of *pain*; ай! ухъ! ой! indicate *fear*; тѣу! indicates *aversion*; уфъ! expresses *fatigue*; ну! нѣже! are used to *encourage*; стъ! тсъ! to impose *silence*; эй! рей! to *call*.

SECOND PART

SYNTAX.

80.—*Syntax*, which treats of the union of the different elements of speech, and of the order in which those different elements ought to be arranged, is divided into three parts: 1) the *concord* of words (согласованіе), or the syntax of agreement, which teaches how to express the union existing between the words forming the proposition; 2) the *dependence* of words (управленіе), or the syntax of government, which teaches the manner of indicating the relation existing between a term and its antecedent; and 3) the *construction* of words (размѣщеніе), or the place to be assigned to the single words in the proposition, and to the propositions in the period.

Division of
Syntax.

CONCORD OF WORDS.

81.—The following are the rules of the concord of words in the Russian language:

1. The *subject* (подлежащее), *attribute* (сказуемое) and *copula* (связка) must agree in gender, number and person; e. g. Божъ есть всемогущъ, *God is almighty*; науки (суть) полезны, *the sciences are useful*; Москвѣ была слава, *Moscow has been celebrated*; Азія будетъ спокойна, *Asia will be tranquil*; солнце взошло, *the sun has risen*. — When the attribute is a noun, it retains its gender and number; as: орелъ есть хищная птица, *the eagle*

is a bird of prey; but the movable nouns agree with the subject; as: лунá есть спътница землі, *the moon is the satellite of the earth.*

To this rule there are the following exceptions: 1) The personal pronoun of the 2d person, with its determinatives, as also the verb and the attribute when an adjective is used, from politeness, in the *plural* instead of the singular; but when the attribute is a noun, it remains in the singular; e. g. вы сáми, другъ мой, нездорóвы, *you yourself, my friend, are indisposed*; будьте свидѣтелямъ, *be a witness.* — 2) The verb *быть*, in the sense of *exist*, though the subject be plural, remains in the *singular* in the 3d person of the present; but in the preterit and future it agrees in number with its subject; e. g. у него́ есть дѣньги, *he has money*; у него́ бѣли дѣньги, *he had money*; у него́ бѣдутъ дѣньги, *he will have money.* — 2) In the case of nouns indicating a title, the verb and the attribute agree in gender with the sex of the person who bears the title; as: Его́ Величество (Корóль) нездорóвъ, *His Majesty (the King) is indisposed*; Ея́ Сіятельство (Графѣня) бѣла́ здѣсь, *Her Excellency (the Countess) has been here*; Его́ Свѣтлость (Князь) прогуливался, *His Highness (the Prince) has taken a walk.*

2. Determinative words agree with the noun they determine, in *gender, number and case*; e. g. Великій Петръ преобразовáлъ обширную Россію, *Peter the Great has regenerated the vast Russian empire.* If the determinative is a noun, it only agrees in *case*; e. g. слѣзы, утѣшѣніе несчастныхъ, у него́ изсякъли, *tears, the consolation of the unhappy, were dried up within him.*

3. Two or more subjects in the singular require the verb and the attribute in the *plural*; e. g. лѣньность и прáздность (суть) вредны, *laziness and inactivity are pernicious.* If the two nouns in the singular are united by an alternative conjunction,

the verb and the attribute must be in the *singular*; e. g. зима́ или весна́ тебѣ́ прі́ятна? *is it winter or spring that is agreeable to thee?*

4. The infinitive, when it performs the office of subject, requires the verb and the attribute to be put in the *neuter singular*; this is also the case with the adverbs много́, *much*; ма́ло, *little*; ско́лько, *how much*; нѣско́лько, *some*; e. g. уми́рать за о́течество (есть) сла́вно и прі́ятно, *it is noble and pleasant to die for one's country*; ско́лько пришло́ семе́йствъ, *how many families have arrived?*

5. When two nouns, the one appellative and the other proper, both relating to the same object, differ in number or gender, the adjective or verb agrees with the *appellative* noun; e. g. дре́вній го́родъ О́ивы, *the ancient city of Thebes*; сла́вная рѣ́ка Дуна́й, *the celebrated river Danube*. When there are two nouns of different genders, the adjective agrees with the *masculine*; e. g. сла́вные ца́ри и ца́рицы, *the celebrated kings and queens*. In the verbs the first person has the priority over the two others, and the second over the third; as: ты и я гу́ляемъ вмѣ́стѣ, *thou and I walk together*; ты и онъ не зна́ете что дѣ́лать, *thou and he know not what to do*.

6. The numerals compounded of оди́нъ, *one*, require the noun in the *singular* (§ 43); e. g. двáдцать оди́нъ ру́бль, *twenty one rubles*; ты́сяча одна́ ночь, *the thousand and one nights*.

7. The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the noun to which they relate, but they take the *case* that the verb of the phrase in which

they occur, may require; e. g. я знаю дѣло, о которомъ вы говорите, *I know the affair of which you speak*. The pronoun *чей*, occurring always with a noun, must agree in every respect with that noun; e. g. тотъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба, *he in whose hands is my destiny*.

EXERCISES ON THE CONCORD OF WORDS.

Winter is agreeable. Men are mortal. Novgorod was
 Зимá пріятный. Человѣкъ смѣртный. Нѡвгородъ быть
 rich. Russia is a vast empire. The Wolga is the king
 богатый. Россія быть обширный имперія. Вѡлга быть царь
 of the rivers of Russia. My friend, you shall be satisfied.
 рѣкá русскій. Мой пріятель, ты быть довольный.
 We have great stores. I shall have to-morrow some
 У я быть большой запасъ. У я быть завтра
 money. Her Majesty (*the Empress*) is gone out. His
 дѣньги. Онъ Величество (*Императрица*) выѣхать. Онъ

Excellency (*the general*) is gone. His Imperial
 Превосходительство (*генерáлъ*) уѣхать. Онъ Императорскій
 Highness (*the Grand-Duke*) has been satisfied. Geography
 Высочество (*Велікій Князь*) быть довольный. Географія
 and history are very useful branches of knowledge.
 и исторія быть весьма полезный знаніе.

It is difficult to be silent. How many children were there?
 Трудный молчать. Сколько дитя быть тамъ?

Moscow is celebrated; the town of Moscow is celebrated.
 Москвá знаменитый; городъ

China is densely peopled; the empire of China is densely
 Кнтай многолюдный; государство

peopled. He has thirty one horses. The book
 У ОНЪ БЫТЬ ТРИДЦАТЬ ОДИНЪ ЛОШАДЬ. Книга,
 which you are reading, is very amusing. Here is
 КОТОРЫЙ ТЫ ЧИТАТЬ, ОЧЕНЬ ЗАБАВНЫЙ. Вотъ
 the man by whose works we profit.
 ЧЕЛОВѢКЪ, (*instr.*) ЧЕЙ ТРУДЪ ПОЛЬЗОВАТЬСЯ.

DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

82.—For the *dependence* or government of words in Russian the following rules are to be observed:

1. Words which, having the same root, appear in the form of substantive, adjective or adverb, as also in the form of verb, participle or gerund, require the same cases; e. g. вредить ближнему, *to do harm to his neighbour*; вредящій ближнему, *doing harm to his neighbour*; вредя ближнему, *in doing harm to his neighbour*; вредъ ближнему, *the harm done to his neighbour*; вредный ближнему, *prejudicial to his neighbour*; вредно ближнему, *prejudicially to his neighbour*.

2. The governing power of the verbs depends on their meaning: the same verb used in different significations requires different cases; e. g. говорить правду, *to speak the truth*; говорить о дѣлѣ, *to speak of an affair*; говорить языкомъ, *to speak a language*; говорить съ другомъ, *to speak with a friend*; отказать просителю, *to refuse a petitioner*; отказать въ просьбѣ, *to refuse a request*; отказать домъ, *to bequeath a house*; отказать отъ должности, *to deprive of an office*.

3. The prepositions communicate to the verbs to which they are joined a double quality. In the first place they express simply the commencement of the action, its duration and its completion; as: игралъ на флѣйтѣ, *he played on the flute*; заигралъ на флѣйтѣ, *he began to play on the flute*; поигравъ на флѣйтѣ, занялся онъ чтеніемъ, *after having played a little on the flute, he busied himself with reading*; вчера сыгралъ на флѣйтѣ претрудное сочиненіе, *yesterday he played on the flute a very difficult composition*; онъ доигралъ на флѣйтѣ начатое на скрипкѣ,

he finished playing on the flute what he had begun on the violin; *отыгра́лъ на флѣйтѣ въ полночь*, he ceased playing on the flute at midnight. Secondly the preposition gives to the verb another meaning; e. g. *писа́ть писѣмо́*, to write a letter; *восписа́ть хвалу́*, to confer praises upon; *вписа́ть въ книгу́*, to inscribe in the book; *выписа́ть изъ книги́*, to extract from a book; *записа́ть въ службу́*, to enter on the service; *написа́ть адре́съ*, to write an address; *отписа́ть къ дру́гу*, to inform a friend; *переписа́ть на́бѣло*, to make a fair copy; *приписа́ть строчку́*, to add a line; *прописа́ть всю службу́*, to describe the whole service; *расписа́ть ко́мнату́*, to paint a room; *списа́ться съ прі́ятелемъ*, to correspond with a friend. The prepositional verbs of the first mentioned class require after them the same *preposition* and the same *case* as in the simple form, while those of the second category, in which the addition of a preposition modifies the sense, take after them the preposition with which they are formed, or a corresponding one, as is seen below.

Verbs formed with the preposition require after them the preposition	воз or въ,	на; e. g. . . <i>взойти́ на гору́</i> , to ascend the mountain.
	в or во,	въ; . . . <i>вступа́ть въ домъ́</i> , to enter in the house.
	вы, . .	изъ; . . . <i>выйти́ изъ лѣсу́</i> , to issue from the forest.
	до, . .	до; . . . <i>до́хатъ до города́</i> , to go as far as the town.
	за, . .	за; . . . <i>заки́нуть за спину́</i> , to throw behind one's self.
	из, . .	изъ; . . . <i>извѣ́чь изъ книги́</i> , to extract from a book.
	на, . .	на; . . . <i>навя́зчикъ на ло́шадь</i> , to place upon a horse.
	над, . .	надъ; . . . <i>насмат́ривать надъ дѣтми́</i> , to watch over the children.
	низ, . .	съ; . . . <i>низлетѣ́тъ съ кро́вли</i> , to fly down from the roof.
	от, . .	отъ; . . . <i>оторва́тъ отъ раб́оты</i> , to tear from labour.
	пере, . .	чрезъ; . . . <i>перескочы́тъ чрезъ ровъ́</i> , to leap across a ditch.
	под, . .	подъ; . . . <i>подложы́тъ подъ го́лову́</i> , to put under his head.
	пред, . .	предъ; . . . <i>предста́тъ предъ судѣ́й</i> , to present himself before the judges.
	при, . .	къ; . . . <i>прійти́ къ дру́гу</i> , to come to a friend.
	про, . .	сквозь; . . . <i>пройти́ сквозъ о́гонь</i> , to pass through the fire.
	произ, . .	отъ; . . . <i>произойти́ отъ болѣ́зни</i> , to arise from a disease.
	раз, . .	на; . . . <i>разрѣ́затъ на ча́сти</i> , to cut into pieces.
	с or со,	съ; . . . <i>ски́нуть съ себ́я</i> , to throw of one's self.

83.—We now give the application of these rules in every case, with the exceptions thereto.

Nominative. In the *nominative* are put: 1) The subject, or the principal member of the proposition; as: *со́лнце свѣти́тъ*, the sun shines; *мо́ре шуми́тъ*, the sea

roars. (The subject with a negative verb is sometimes put in the *genitive*; see below.)—2) The attribute, united to the subject by means of the verb *есть*, *былъ* or *буду*, when it expresses a permanent quality of the subject; as: орёлъ есть птица, *the eagle is a bird*; Адамъ былъ человѣкъ, *Adam was a man*. The adjective in this occasion is used in the apocopated termination; as: Богъ есть всемогущъ, *God is almighty*; Славяне были храбры, *the Slavonians were brave*. If the attribute does not express some permanent quality of the subject, but only a transitory one and of short duration, it is then put in the *instrumental*; as: мой братъ былъ въ то время кадѣтомъ, *my brother was at that time a cadet*; онъ скоро будетъ генераломъ, *he will soon be a general*. This exception however occurs only with the preterit and the future, never with the present.

In the *vocative* is put the name or denomination of the person addressed; e. g. *Богъе, спаси Царя!* *God, save the Tzar!* *Господи, помилуй меня!* *Lord, have mercy upon me!* Vocative.

The *accusative* is used: 1) After the active verbs; Accusative.
as: птица пьётъ воду, *the bird drinks the water*; я погасилъ свѣчу, *I have put out the candle*; мой сосѣдъ купилъ домъ, *my neighbour has bought a house*. The verbal nouns, formed from these verbs, require the *genitive*; as: питьё воды, *the drinking of the water*; погашеніе свѣчи, *the putting out of the candle*; покупка дома, *the purchase of a house*. —2) To indicate the duration of an action for a given time or over a given distance; as: я писалъ

всю ночь, *I have written the whole night*; онъ про́бхаль версту́, *he has run a verst.*—3) After the prepositions *въ, на, за, подъ, предъ, про, сквозь, чрезъ, о* or *объ, по* and *съ* (§ 77).

Dative. The *dative* is used: 1) With the accusative, to indicate the person to whose gain or loss the action is performed; e. g. ты по́далъ мѣлостыню́ бѣ́дному, *thou hast given alms to the poor man.*—2) After the verbs formed with the prepositions *предъ* and *со* (in a sense of reciprocity), or with the adverbs *бл́го, прѣ́мвѣ* and *прѣ́ко*; as: ѳсень прѣдшѣ́ствуетъ зимѣ́, *autumn precedes winter*; не прѣкослѣ́вь ста́ршимъ, *do not contradict the aged.*—3) After the verbs expressing command or prohibition, pleasure or grief, compliance or opposition, assistance or obstacle; e. g. мы подража́емъ дрѣ́внимъ, *we imitate the ancients*; не льсти́ богаты́мъ, *do not flatter the rich*; служи́ усер́дно Госудáрю, *serve the sovereign with zeal.* The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the dative; as: подража́нiе дрѣ́внимъ, *the imitation of the ancients*; лести́ богаты́мъ, *flattery to the rich.*—4) After such verbs as are used in the infinitive instead of the future; as: бы́ть бѣ́дѣ́, *there will be a misfortune*; не ви́дѣ́тъ намъ́ яснѣ́хъ дне́й, *we shall see no more fine days.*—5) With the impersonal verbs; as: мнѣ́ хѳ́чется ѣ́сть, *I want to eat*; вамъ́ нездо́рови́тся, *you are indisposed.*—6) With such adjectives and adverbs as are derived from the above mentioned verbs, or which express advantage or detriment, utility or uselessness, pleasure or dislike; e. g. прíятный́ слѣ́ху, *agreeable to the ear*; жи́ть при-

лично своему состоянию, *to live suitably to one's condition*.—7) After the prepositions *кз* and *но*, and the adverb *вопреки* (§ 77).

The *instrumental* is used: 1) With the active, neuter, pronominal and passive verbs, *a*) to designate the instrument, the means by which the action is performed; as: онъ берётъ книгу руками, *he takes the book with the hands*; я моюсь водою, *I wash myself with water*; книга написана моимъ учителемъ, *the book has been written by my master*; *b*) to designate the name, surname or quality given to an object; as: его зовутъ Иваномъ, *they call him John*; тебя почитаютъ умнымъ, *you are considered intelligent*. Some active verbs expressing motion, which usually govern the accusative, are also found with the instrumental; as: бросать камень and бросать камнемъ, *to throw a stone*; двигать сердца and сердцами, *to move the hearts*.—2) With the verb *быть* and *быва́ть*, to designate a quality; as: онъ хочетъ быть любимымъ, *he desires to be loved*; не быва́ть тебѣ воиномъ, *thou wilt not be a warrior*. (See above the nominative).—3) After such verbs as indicate contempt, indignation, esteem, possession, sacrifice, &c.; as: пренебрега́ть опасностью, *to despise danger*; владе́ть имѣниемъ, *to possess a property*; жертвовать собою, *to sacrifice one's self*. The verbal nouns formed from such verbs also require the instrumental; as: пренебреже́ние опасностью, *the contempt of danger*; владѣ́ние имѣниемъ, *the possession of a property*.—4) To designate that part of an object which is distinguished by some particular quality; as: лицёмъ

бѣль, *white in the face*; широкъ плечами, *broad in the shoulders*.—5) To indicate the road an object takes; and also to designate the seasons and the parts of the day; as: плыть моремъ, *to go by sea*; весною сѣютъ, *one sows in spring*; ночью спятъ, *one sleeps at night*.—6) After the prepositions за, надъ, подъ, предъ, съ, and the adverb между or межъ (§ 77).

Genitive. The *genitive* is used: 1) With nouns to indicate that one object is the property of another, and also its origin, &c.; as: хозяинъ дома, *the master of the house*; домъ сосѣда, *the house of the neighbour*; сынъ солдата, *the son of a soldier*. The complementary noun in such occasions may be converted into a possessive adjective; as: домовый хозяинъ, сосѣдний домъ, солдатскій сынъ. The dative may sometimes be substituted for this genitive; as: другъ брату, *the friend of the brother*; цѣна мѣстамъ, *the price of the places*. A noun with a qualifying adjective indicates in the genitive the quality of the object in a higher degree; as: чай лучшаго сорта, *a tea of superior quality*; человекъ строгихъ правилъ, *a man of rigid principles*.—2) With the verbal nouns, formed from active verbs governing the accusative; e. g. чтѣнiе книги, *the reading of a book*; знанiе дѣла, *the knowledge of an affair*.—3) To designate number, weight, measure, and in general after adverbs of quantity; as: пудъ сѣна, *a good of hay*; аршинъ сукна, *an ell of cloth*; нѣсколько книгъ, *some books*.—4) To designate the years, the months and the day of the month; as: шестого января тысяча восемьсотъ

четырнадцатого года, *January 6th 1814.*—5) After active verbs preceded by the negative adverb *не*, and with the impersonal negative verbs *нѣтъ*, *не стало*, *не слышно*, *не имѣется*, and others indicating privation; e. g. *не люблю невѣжды*, *I do not like the ignorant*; *не вижу пользы*, *I do not see the advantage*; *у насъ нѣтъ хлѣба*, *we have no bread*; *когда меня не будетъ*, *when I shall be no more*; *не видно переменъ*, *one sees no change.*—6) With the active verbs, when the action extends only to a part of the object, or lasts only a limited time; e. g. *принеси воды*, *bring me some water*; *дай мнѣ перо*, *give me your pen for a little while.* The same is the case with some verbs formed with the prepositions *на* and *по*, as: *пойдти рыбы*, *to catch some fish*; *покосить травы*, *to mow some grass.*—7) With such active and pronominal verbs as express desire, expectation, disobedience, fear, privation, &c.; e. g. *желаемъ счастья*, *we desire health*; *онъ ждетъ разсвѣта*, *he awaits daybreak*; *бояться дневнаго свѣта*, *to fear the light of day*; *держаться правилъ чести*, *to keep to principles of honour.* The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the genitive; as: *желаніе славы*, *the desire of glory*; *лишеніе имѣнія*, *the loss of a property.*—8) After the adjectives *достойный*, *worthy*; *полный*, *full*; *чуждый*, *a stranger to*; and the adverb *жаль*, *it is a pity*; e. g. *я чуждъ сего мнѣнія*, *I am a stranger to this opinion*; *жаль ему брата*, *he is sorry for his brother.*—9) After adjectives and adverbs in the comparative, when not followed by a conjunction; e. g. *сокровища драгоцѣннѣйшія*

зѡлота, *treasures more precious than gold*; слонѣ выше верблюда, *the elephant is larger than the camel*; онѣ жилѣ долѣе всѣхѣ, *he has lived longer than all*.—10) After the prepositions безѣ, для, до, изѣ, изѣ-за, изѣ-подѣ, отѣ, рѣди, съ and у, as also after most of the adverbs used as prepositions (§ 77), remarking that the prepositions для and рѣди are sometimes placed after their complement; as: для Бѡга and Бѡга для, *for God's sake*; рѣди чѣсти and чѣсти рѣди, *for honour*.

Lastly the *genitive* is used with the numerals. See the particular rules relative to the numerals § 43.

Preposi-
tional.

The *prepositional* case is only used with the prepositions въ, на, о or обѣ, no and при (§ 77).

EXERCISES ON THE DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

Nominative. Water is an element. Alexander of Macedon was a great captain. The Tatars were ferocious. My grand-father was an officer; my grand-father was then an officer. It is said that the comets have been or will be once planets.

Водѣ быть стихія. Алексѣндрѣ Македонскій быть великій полковѡдецъ. Татаринѣ быть свирѣпый. Мой дѣдѣ быть офицерѣ; тогда . Говорятъ что комѣта быть или быть ещё планѣта.

Accusative. The rain refreshes the earth. Rogues hate honest men. The storm which devastated our fields, has ruined many peasants. Speak always the truth. My brother has many peasants. Speak always the truth. My brother has many peasants. Speak always the truth. My brother has many peasants.

Дождѣ освѣжать землѣ. Злодѣи ненавидѣть честный люди. Бурѣ, опустошать нашѣ поле, разорять много поселянинѣ. Говорить всегда правда. Мой братѣ быть

been sick all winter. I have been a whole verst on horseback.
 больной весь зима́. Я ѣхатъ цѣлый верста́ верхомъ.

Thou art praised for thy assiduity. He struck himself against
 Ты хвалить за прилежаніе. Онъ ударяться объ
 the wall. We are in the water up to the neck. The son
 стѣна́. Я сидѣть въ вода́ по ше́я. Сынъ

is the size of the father, and the daughter almost the size of
 ростъ съ отѣцъ, и дочь почти съ
 the mother.

мать.

The miser prefers money to glory, and the warrior Dative.
 Скупѣцъ предпочитатъ деньги слава, и во́инъ
 prefers glory to money. The lightning precedes the
 слава деньги. Мо́лнія предше́ствовать

thunder. I admire your patience. Do these pictures
 громъ. Дивиться вашъ терпѣніе. Э́тотъ картина

please you? Do not avenge thyself on thy enemy,
 нравиться ли ты? Не мстить твой непріятель,

and do good to him who has offended thee. There will
 и дѣлать добро́ обижать ты. Быть

be a prodigy. Bitter tears will be shed. The child wishes
 чудо. Горькій слеза́ литься. Ребе́нокъ хотѣться

to drink. It is not proper for a strong man to offend
 пить. Не приличнѣй сильный челове́къ обижать

the weak. The imitation of Jesus Christ. The love of
 сла́бый. Подража́ніе Иису́съ Христосъ. Любо́вь къ

virtue and the hatred of vice.

добродѣтель и ненави́сть къ поро́къ.

I see with the eyes, I touch with the hands, I hear with Instru-
 Видѣть глаза́, осяза́тъ рука́, слы́шать mental.

the ears, I smell with the nose, I taste with the tongue.
 у́хо, обоня́тъ носъ, вкуша́тъ язы́къ.

Ismail was taken by Souvorof, and Otchakow by Potemkin.
Измайлъ взятъ Суворовъ, и Очаковъ Потёмкинъ.

Every body calls these officers heroes. The patient moves
Весь называть этотъ офицеръ герой. Больной шевелить
scarcely the lips. I detest fraud and falsehood. Here
едва губа. Гнушаться обманъ и ложь. Здѣсь

one breathes a pure air. The sacrifice of one's life for
дышать чистый воздухъ. Пожертвованіе жизнь за
his sovereign and country. He is kind in heart, but weak
Государь и отечество. Онъ добрый сердце, но слабый

in head. One must rise in the morning, work during
голова. Надобно вставать утро, работать
the day, rest in the evening and sleep during the night.
день, отдыхать вечеръ, и спать ночь.

Reconcile my friend with his uncle. I congratulate you on
Помирить мой другъ съ онъ дядя. Поздравлять ты съ
your success.
вашъ успѣхъ.

Genitive. The son of my faithful friend departed yesterday. Quick-
Сынъ мой искренній другъ уѣзжать вчера. Большой

witted children are often delicate. There has been made
умъ дитя бывать нерѣдко хилый. Составлять

a list of the officers of our division. The baking of bread.
списокъ офицеръ нашъ дивизія. Печеніе хлѣбъ.

I have bought a pound of tea and a cord of wood. Such
Я купить фунтъ чай и сажень дрова. Столько

labour and pains have been lost uselessly. The Russians
трудъ и забота пропадать по-пустому. Русскій

took Paris March 18th 1814. I do not eat bread, but
брать Парижъ мартъ 18 1814. Я не ѣсть хлѣбъ, но

I drink water. I eat the bread, but I do not drink the water.
пить вода. Я ѣсть хлѣбъ, но не пить вода.

I have received neither letter nor packet. In this letter there
Я получа́ть не ни письмо́, ни посы́лка. Въ э́тотъ письмо́ нѣтъ
is not a fault. Procure me money. The warriors wish

ни одинъ ошибка. Достава́ть я де́ньги. Вои́нъ жела́ть
for the battle and seek glory. The ambitious man thirsts for
бѣтва и иска́ть сла́ва. Славолю́бецъ жа́ждать

honours. Thou desirest riches, and thou fearest labour.
по́честъ. Ты хоте́ть богáтство, и бо́яться трудъ.

The barrel is full of wine. A worthy man is a stranger to hatred
Бочка́ по́лный вино́. Добры́й челове́къ чу́ждый злоба
and envy. Gold is dearer than silver; lead is heavier

и за́вистъ. Зо́лото доро́гой серебро́; свине́цъ тяжё́лый
than iron. He asks alms for Christ's sake. Rest is
же́лѣзо. Онъ проси́тъ мѣлостыня Христо́съ ра́ди. О́тдыхъ

agreeable after labour. Along this shore runs a chain
прѣ́ятный по́слъ рабо́та. Вдо́ль э́тотъ бе́регъ тяну́ться це́пь
of mountains. The wolves prowl round the villages.

гора́. Волкъ броди́тъ о́коло дере́вня.

My brother preserves his presence of mind in all the Preposi-
tional.
Мой братъ храни́тъ прису́тствіе ду́хъ при весь

troubles of life. This town is built on the precipitous
непрѣ́ятность въ жизнь. Сей го́родъ постро́ить на круто́й

bank of a rapid river. A church with five cupolas. He
бе́регъ бы́стрый рѣ́ка. Це́рковь о́ пять гла́ва. Онъ
weeps over his father.

пла́кать по́ свой о́тець.

THE FAIRY.

Во́лше́бница́.

The differ-
ent rules of
Syntax.

A widow had two daughters: the elder resembled

Оди́нъ вдова́ имѣ́тъ два дочь: ста́рый бы́ть похо́жий на

her mother both in face and temper, that is to say, she was
свой ма́ть и ли́цѣ и нра́въ, то е́сть, онъ бы́ть

as ugly and as malicious as her mother. Nobody такъ же дурной и такъ же злой, какъ онъ мать. Никто loved them; every one avoided them. The younger was не любить онъ; весь бѣгать отъ онъ. Малый же быть beautiful and good. Every one loved her. But her прекрасный и добродушный. Весь любить онъ. Но онъ malicious mother and her wicked sister detested her; злый мать и злый сестра ненавидеть онъ; they scolded her without ceasing; she alone was obliged бранить безпрестанно; онъ одинъ быть должный to work in the house, to heat the stove, to sweep the rooms, работать въ домъ, топить печь, месті горница, to cook. The poor child wept from morning till стрѣпать въ кѹхня. Бѣдняжка плакать съ утро до night, but she was not lazy at her work; she was вѣчеръ, но онъ не лѣниться работать; быть obedient, patient, and all that was in vain, for послушный, терпѣливый, и весь этотъ быть напрасный, ибо she could in no way satisfy her wicked mother and мочь не ничто угодять на свой злой мать и на her wicked sister. свой злой сестра.

Every day this poor girl was forced to go with Ежедневно этотъ бѣдный дѣвушка быть должный ходить съ a large pitcher to fetch water in a neighbouring wood, большой кувшинъ за вода въ ближній роща, where there was a clear spring. One day she въ который находится чистый источникъ. Однажды онъ had gone according to custom to this spring. The day пойти по обыкновеніе къ этотъ источникъ. День was very hot. After having filled her pitcher with water, быть очень жаркій. Наполнять кувшинъ вода,

she returned home. All at once she saw before her
 онъ возвращаться домой. Вдругъ видѣть предъ себя
 an old woman. "My child!" said to her the old woman,
 старушка. «Мой дитя!» скáзывать онъ старушка,
 "give me water to drink; I am wearied; I am very hot." —
 «давáть я напивáться; я уставáть; я (*быть*) жаркíй.» —
 "With pleasure, good mother", said the young girl, "here
 «Съ охóта, бабушка», скáзывать дѣвушка, «вотъ!
 drink." And she presented the pitcher to the poor woman.
 напивáться.» И онъ подавáть кувшинъ старушка.

The old woman sat down on the grass from weariness, and
 Старушка садíтся на травá отъ слабóсть, а
 the young girl kneeled down before her, and
 молодóй красáвица становíтся на колѣно перéдъ онъ, и
 held gently the pitcher, while she drank.
 поддѣрживать остóрожно кувшинъ, покá онъ пítь водá.
 "I thank thee, my dear!" said the old woman after
 «Благодарíть ты, мíлый!» скáзывать старушка,
 having drunk. "I see that thou art a good, an amiable
 напивáться. «Видѣть, что ты (*есть*) дóбрый, лáсковый
 child, and I wish to reward thee for thy kindness.
 дитя, и хотѣть награждáть ты за твой услужливóсть.
 Know then that I am a fairy, and that I took pur-
 Знать же, я волшебница, и взять на себя на-
 posely the form of an old woman to put thee to the proof.
 рóчно видѣ старушка, чтобы ты испытывать.
 I am delighted that thou art so good, and this is what
 Рáдоваться, что ты (*есть*) такой дóбрый, и вотъ, что
 I will do for thee: every time that thou shalt pronounce
 хотѣть сдѣлать для ты: всякíй разъ, что ты скáзывать
 a word, there shall issue from thy mouth either a pretty
 слóво, выпадáть изъ у ты ротъ или прекрáсный

flower, or a precious stone, or a large pearl.
цвѣтокъ, или драгоцѣнный камень, или большой жемчужина.

Farewell, my little friend." And the fairy disappeared.
Прости, дружокъ.» И волшебница исчезать.

The pretty girl returned home. "Where hast
Прекрасный дѣвушка возвращаться домой. «Гдѣ

thou been so long", asked her mother with ill
ты быть такъ долго», спрашивать у онъ мать съ

humour? — "What hast thou been doing so long in the wood?"
сѣрдце? — «Что ты дѣлать такъ долго въ роща?»,

cried her wicked sister. — "I beg pardon! I lingered by the
закричать злой сестра. — «Виноватый! замѣшкаться,

way", replied the poor child, and at the same instant
отвѣчать бѣдняжка, и въ тотъ самый минута

there issued from her pretty lips two roses, two pearls,
скатываться изъ онъ прекрасный губа два роза, два жемчужина

and two large emeralds. "What do I see?" exclaimed
и два большой изумрудъ. «Что я видѣть?» восклицать

the mother astonished. "These are flowers! these are precious
мать удивленный. «Этотъ цвѣтъ! этотъ драгоцѣнный

stones! What has happened to thee?" — The young girl
камень! Что сдѣлаться съ ты?» — Красавица раз-

related to her with simplicity her meeting with the fairy,
сказывать онъ простоушно о свой встрѣча съ волшебница

and while doing it the flowers, diamonds and pearls
и между тотъ цвѣтъ, алмазь и жемчугъ

issued just so from her lips. "Good!" muttered
сыпаться такъ съ онъ губа. «Хорошій же!» проворчать

the mother; "to-morrow I will send to the wood my elder
мать; «завтра посылать въ роща мой старый

daughter, and it will be the same with her."

дочь, и быть тотъ же съ онъ.»

And the next morning she said to her daughter:

И на друго́й у́тро онъ скáзывать сво́й дочъ:

"To-day thou shalt go to fetch water: take the pitcher; but
«Ны́нче ты пойт́и за вода́: взять кувши́нъ; но

pay attention, if thou meetest at the spring an old woman,
смотре́ть же, е́сли встрѣ́чать у исто́чникъ стару́шка,

give her to drink, and be very civil to her."
дава́ть онъ напива́ться, и хороше́нко прила́скиваться къ онъ.»

The wicked girl frowned, took the pitcher with ill
Зло́й дѣвчо́нка нахму́риваться, взять кувши́нъ съ

humour; went to the wood against her will, and grumbled
доса́да; пойт́и въ ро́ща не́хотя, и ворча́ть

all along the road. The good old woman was already
весь въ доро́га. Стару́шка сидѣ́ть у́же

seated near the spring. "Draw me some water, my
у исто́чникъ. «Зачерпа́ть я вода́, мой

dear!" said she to the young girl; "it is hot, I wish
ми́лый!» сказа́ть онъ дѣвчо́нка; «(есть) жа́ркій, хоте́ть

to drink." — "What stuff! I am not come here
напива́ться.» — «Ка́къ бы не такъ! Я не прийт́и сю́да за то,

to serve old vagabonds; thou wilt have to drink
чтобы́ услу́живать ста́рый бродя́га; напива́ться и

without me." — "How rude thou art!" said the old
безъ я.» — «Како́й же гру́бый ты!» скáзывать ста-

woman to her; "I will punish thee. From this moment with
ру́шка онъ; «я нака́зывать ты. Съ это́тъ пора́ при

each of thy words there shall issue from thy mouth either
ка́ждый тво́й сло́во выпада́ть изъ у ты ро́тъ или́

a serpent or a frog." She disappeared, and the wicked
змя́ или́ лягу́шка.» Онъ исче́заетъ, а зло́й

girl ran home after having broken her pitcher
дѣвчо́нка побѣ́жать домо́й разби́вать сво́й кувши́нъ

from spite. "What hast thou to tell me my dear daughter?"
съ досада. «Что скáзывать, мѣлый дѣчка?»

asked her mother, when she saw her at a distance. —
спрашивать мать, видѣть онъ издалека. —

"I have nothing to tell!" answered the daughter; and all
«Нѣчто скáзывать!» отвѣчать дочь; и

at once there issued from her mouth two vipers and two
вдругъ выскáкивать изъ онъ ротъ два змѣя и два

toads. "What do I see! what horror!" cried the mother;
жаба. «Что я видѣть! какѣй страхъ!» закричать мать;

"but it is thy sister who is the cause of all that! I
«но твой сестра (есть) виновáтый въ весь э́тотъ! Я

will make her feel it." And they ran to beat the young girl.
давать онъ знать.» И онъ броса́ться бить менѣшой дочь.

Frightened by their threats, she went to hide herself in
Испугáться угро́за, онъ скрыватьсѣ въ

the wood, ran long without daring to look behind her,
рѣща, бѣгать до́лго, не смѣть огляды́ваться,

fled very far and at last lost herself. But this
забѣгать далеко́, и наконецъ потеря́ть доро́га. Но э́тотъ

was for her good. The son of the king, who was
быть къ онъ сча́стие. Сынъ ца́рский, кото́рый

amusing himself at that time with hunting, was just
забавля́ться ту́тъ охота́, находя́ться въ то́тъ

then in the wood; he saw the young girl, who, seated
время въ рѣща; уви́дѣть красáвица, кото́рый, сидѣть

on the grass, was weeping bitterly. "What has happened to
на травá, пла́кать го́рько. «Что сдѣлаться съ

thee? why dost thou weep, my dear?" asked he, taking
ты? о что ты пла́кать, мѣлый?» спрашивать онъ, взять

her gently by the hand. — "Alas! how can I help
онъ ла́сково за рука́. — «Богъ мой! какъ я не

weeping! My mother has driven me out of the house." She
 пла́кать! Ма́тушка выгоня́ть я изъ до́мъ. Онъ
 spoke, and the flowers and the precious stones issued from
 говори́ть, а цвѣтъ и драгоце́нный ка́мень сы́паться съ
 her rosy lips, and her tears were changed into pearls.
 ро́зовый губа, и слеза́ обращатьсѣ въ жемчу́жина.

"What is the meaning of that?" asked the son of the king;
 «Что значить э́тотъ?» спра́шивать сынъ ца́рский;
 "whence come these flowers, these pearls and these stones?"
 «отъ что э́тотъ цвѣтъ, жемчу́гъ и ка́мень?»

The poor child related to the prince what had
 Бѣдня́жка разска́зывать ца́рский сынъ о то́мъ, что
 happened to her. He became in love with her, and
 случи́ться съ онъ. Онъ полюби́тъ онъ, и
 he loved her more on account of her being so good and
 полюби́тъ ещё бо́лье за то, что онъ бы́ть такъ до́брый и
 so pretty, than on account of her flowers and precious
 ми́лый, неже́ли за онъ цвѣтъ и драгоце́нный
 stones. He took her with him, presented her to the king
 ка́мень. Онъ взя́тъ онъ съ се́бя, предста́влять онъ ца́рь,
 his father, whom she pleased also, and the king
 свой о́тецъ, кото́рый онъ пона́равится та́кже, и ца́рь
 permitted his son to marry her. Thus she became
 позволя́ть сынъ жени́ться на онъ. Тако́й о́бразъ онъ сдѣ́латься
 a princess, and on the death of the king, when her husband
 царевна, а по сме́рть ца́рь, ко́гда онъ му́жъ
 mounted the throne of his ancestors, she became queen,
 восходи́тъ на престо́лъ о́тцовскій, ца́рица,
 and was a good queen. And her wicked sister, what
 и бы́ть до́брый ца́рица. А онъ зло́й сестра́, что
 happened to her? She closed her life in a miserable
 сдѣ́латься съ онъ? Онъ конча́тъ свой жи́знь жа́лостный

way. Her mother, whom she vexed and irritated incessantly, was forced to drive her from house: престанно, быть принужденный выгонять онъ изъ домъ; nobody would give her an asylum, and she went to hide никто не хотѣть давать онъ пристанище, и онъ скрывать herself in the forest, where she died shortly after of vexation ся въ лѣсъ, гдѣ умирать скоро съ досада and hunger.
и голодъ.

CONSTRUCTION.

84.—The grammatical order of the words in Russian is further removed from the natural construction, and inversions are more frequent than in English, French or even German; this however causes no obscurity, in as much as the inflections of the words sufficiently indicate their relative concord or dependence. With respect to the order of the propositions in the sentence, it is nearly the same in the four languages, as is seen in the following examples.

Если гѣній и дарованія ума If genius and talents merit
имѣють право на благодар- the gratitude of the nations,
ность народовъ, то Россія Russia owes a monument to
должна Ломоносову монумент- Lomonossof. *Karamzin.*
томъ. *Карамзинъ.*

Побѣды, завоеванія и величіе The victories, the conquests
государственное, возвысивъ and the grandeur of the empire,
духъ народа Россійскаго, имѣли by elevating the intelligence
счастливое дѣйствіе и на самый of the Russian nation, had a
языкъ его, который, будучи happy influence even on the
управляемъ дарованіемъ и language, which, when em-

вкусомъ писателя умнаго, мѣ- жетъ равняться нынѣ въ силѣ, красотѣ и пріятности съ луч- шими языками древности и нашихъ вѣмѣнъ.

Карамзинъ.

Повелитель многихъ языковъ языкъ Россійскій не только обширностію мѣстъ, гдѣ онъ господствуетъ, но купно и собственнымъ своимъ пространствомъ и доволѣвіемъ великъ передъ всѣми въ Европѣ. Карлъ V, Римскій Императоръ, говаривалъ, что Испанскимъ языкомъ съ Богомъ, Французскимъ съ друзьями, Нѣмецкимъ съ непріятелями, Италіанскимъ съ жѣнскимъ поломъ говорить прилично. Но если бы онъ Россійскому языку былъ искусенъ, то конечно къ тому присовокупилъ бы, что имъ со всѣми бными говорить пристойно. Ибо нашѣлъ бы въ немъ великолѣпіе Испанскаго, живость Французскаго, крѣпость Нѣмецкаго, нѣжность Италіанскаго, сверхъ того богатство и сильную въ изображеніяхъ краткость Греческаго и Латинскаго языка.

Ломоносовъ.

ployed by the talent and the taste of man of genius, can now rival in strength, beauty and delicacy the noblest tongues of ancient and modern times.

Karamzin.

The Russian language, the parent of many others, is superior to all the languages of Europe not only by the extent of the countries where it is dominant, but also by its own comprehensiveness and richness. Charles the Fifth, Emperor of the Romans, said that one ought to speak Spanish to the Divinity, French to one's friends, German to one's enemies and Italian to ladies. But had he been acquainted with Russian, he would assuredly have added that one could speak it with each and all. He would have discovered in it the majesty of the Spanish, the vivacity of the French, the strength of the German, the sweetness of the Italian, and in addition energetic conciseness in its imagery with the richness of the Greek and Latin.

Lomonossov.

THIRD PART

ORTHOGRAPHY.

USE OF THE LETTERS.

85.—We have already seen (§ 7—10) that several letters lose their own peculiar sound, taking that of the letter with which they have the closest affinity, and that certain other letters are silent, disappearing entirely in the pronunciation. In such cases the object of *Orthography* is to indicate the letter which has lost its own peculiar sound and taken an accidental one; and, to do that, recourse must be often had to etymology, in order to discover a derivative and give it, by the help of the grammatical forms, such an inflection as may serve to show the form of the doubtful letter.

Vowels. 86.—Several vowels are often confounded in writing, on account of the close affinity or perfect identity of their pronunciation. As this confusion arises almost invariably from the absence of the tonic accent, it is necessary, in order to discover the form of the letter, to find a derivative or an inflection of the word where the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:

we write: ямщикъ (and not емщикъ), a postilion.
яйцо (and not ейцо), an egg. . . .
ячмень (and not ечмень), barley. . .
тяну (and not теку), I draw. . . .
вяжу (and not вежу), I bind. . . .
жалю (and not желю), I pity. . . .
шалуя (and not шелю), a rogue.
часы (and not чesы), a watch. . . .
щадить (and not шедить), to spare.
молитва (and not малитва), a prayer.
вдова (and not едава), the widow. .
говорить (and not заварить), to speak.

because we say: ямъ (primitive word), a relay.
яйца (nom. plur.), eggs.
ячный (derivative), of barley.
тянутъ (3d pers. pl.), they draw.
вяжешь (2d pers. sing.), thou bindest.
жалъ (primitive), pity.
шалость (derivative), roguery.
часъ (primitive), the hour.
пощада (derivative), pardon.
онъ молить (3d pers. sing.), he prays.
вдовы (nom. plur.), the widows.
говоръ, speaking, & разговоръ, discourse.

Е. Ё. — The two vowels most commonly confounded are *e* and *ё*. In order to know which of them ought to be used, recourse must be had to the dictionary. We may however observe that the letter *ё* is never used in words taken from foreign languages; as: кадетъ, a cadet; слесарь, a locksmith (Germ. *Эßlößer*); пеня, fine (Lat. *pæna*), excepting in Вѣна, Vienna, which is properly speaking a Slavonic word. Sometimes the vowel *и* (or *i*) is changed in the derivatives into *ё*; as: бесѣда, conversation; дѣти, children; Алексѣй, Alexis; Сергѣй, Sergius; Апрель, April (from сидѣть, to be seated; дитя, child; Алексій, Сергій, Априлій). In the words лѣкарь, a physician; лѣкарство, a medicine; лѣчить, to heal, &c.; which some persons write лѣкаръ, лекарство, лечить, the Dictionary of the Russian Academy preserves the letter *ё*. These vowels may in some occasions be distinguished. As the vowel *e* is in certain cases pronounced *io* or *o*, and the vowel *ё* has this sound only in some words (§ 8), it is necessary to look for an inflection or a word in which the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:

we write: слеза (and not слѣза), the tear.
ель (and not ѣль), the fir.
берёзникъ (and not берѣзникъ), a birch kopse.
ледникъ (and not лѣдникъ), an ice-house. .
утвердить (and not утѣврдить), to affirm.
угнетѣніе (and not угнуѣмѣніе), persecution.

on account of: слѣзы (nom. plur.), the tears.
ѣлка (diminutive), a little fir.
берѣза (primitive), a birch.
лѣдъ (primitive), ice.
твёрдый (primitive), firm.
гнѣтъ (primitive), stick for packing.

Е. Э. — The vowel *э* is used at the beginning of the Russian words эй, ho! эхъ, hey! этотъ, this; экой and этакой, oh what! also at the beginning of foreign words and after a vowel; e. g. экваторъ, the equator; эфиръ, ether; поэма, a poem;

поэтъ, *a poet*. After *i* we can in this case employ the vowel *e*, as in пиеса, *a piece*. Such words as had been incorporated into the Russian language before the vowel *э* was in use, are written with *e*; as: евангеліе, *the gospel*; епископъ, *a bishop*; епархія, *a diocese*; евнѹхъ, *an eunuch*; Европа, *Europe*, and some others. The vowel *e* is further used for the Latin or German letters *je*, *gi* and *ge*; as прое́ктъ, *a project*; ре́е́стръ, *a register*; ефе́съ, *the sword-hilt*, ефре́йторъ, *a corporal* (*Lat. projectum, register; Germ. Gefäß, Gefreiter*).

II. I. — The vowel *i* is used, instead of *u*, before all the vowels and before the semi-vowel *й*; as: сі́е, *that*; при́ча́тъ, *to accustom*; при́ятный, *agreeable*; ге́ній, *genius*, as also in the word мі́ръ, *the world*, and its derivatives: мі́рско́й, *worldly*; всемі́рный, *universal*; Влади́міръ, *Vladimir*, to be distinguished from мі́ръ, *peace*, and its derivatives; as: мі́рный, *peaceful*; ми́ри́тъ, *to reconcile*; сме́рный, *calm*. In words formed from the numerals, as: пяти-аршинный, *of five yards*; семи-уго́льный, *heptagon*, &c., the letter *u* is retained, but a hyphen must be placed between the two parts of the word. In the word мѣ́ро, *the holy oil*, and its derivatives: мѣ́ропома́заніе, *unction*; мѣ́роно́сца, *bearer of aromatics*; мѣ́ропома́зани́къ, *the Lord's anointed*, the Slavonic letter ѿѿѿца has been retained.

II. Ы. — The vowel *ы* is formed by the union of *ѡ* and *и*; in compound words however it is necessary to retain the form of these two letters, and write, for instance: предше́дущій, *preceding*; безѡимѣ́нный, *anonymous*, &c. It is only in the words compounded of иска́тъ, *to seek*, and игра́тъ, *to play*, that the letters *ѡ* and *и* are joined and form *ы*; e. g. съѡщи́къ, *an emissary*; ро́зыскъ, *the inquiry*; сыгра́ться, *to play quits*; разыгра́тъ, *to raffle for* (instead of съѡщи́къ, ро́зѡискъ, сыигра́ться, раѡзыгра́тъ). — In foreign words after *ц* the vowel *и* is employed, although pronounced *ы*; thus we write меди́цина, *medicine*; цѣрку́ль, *compasses*; цѣфра (which some persons write цѣ́фра), *a cipher*; excepting цыга́нъ, *a gypsy*, and цыфо́ръ, *ciphers*. — In the adjectives it is necessary to distinguish the terminations *ыѡ* and *иѡ*, as: по́стный, *of Lent*; ле́тний, *of summer*, and its compounds: соверше́нноле́тний, *of full age*; столе́тний, *centenary*; &c.; the word ма́лоле́тний, *young* is an exception.

87.—The semi-vowels (ѣ, ъ, й), the two first of which are placed after consonants, and the last after vowels, are vowels only half uttered (§ 9), *ѣ* being half of the vowel *o*, *ъ* and *й* half of the vowel *u*. Semi-vowels.

The semi-vowel *ѣ* at the end of words may be used after all the consonants, while the semi-vowel *ъ* cannot be placed either after the gutturals (г, к, х) or the lingual (ц). The hard or liquid sound of these two letters, which is generally perceived after consonants, as: *братъ, the brother*, and *брать, to take*; *пылъ, flame*, and *пыль, dust*; *станъ, the stature*, and *станъ, become*, is not distinguished after the hissing letters (ж, ч, ш, щ), as in the words: *ножь, a knife*, and *ложь, a lie*; *мечъ, a sword*, and *сечь, to cut*; *камышъ, the reed*, and *мышь, a mouse*; *тощъ, fasting*, and *нощъ, the night*.

In the middle of a word the semi-vowel *ъ* is placed after all the consonants, excepting г, к, х, ц; e. g. *судьба, destiny*; *весьма, very*; *обезьяна, a monkey*; *деньги, money*; *письмо, a letter*; *польза, utility*; *сельдь, a herring*; *тюрьма, the prison*, &c. The semi-vowel *ѣ*, in words formed with a preposition, is only retained before the vowels, *e, u, ъ, ю, я*; as: *отъѣмлю, I take away*; *предыдущій, preceding*; *въѣхать, to enter*; *объяродѣть, to become a fool*; *объявить, to announce*. The same is the case with the Latin prepositions *ad* and *ob*, as in the words *адъютантъ, an adjutant*; *объективный, objective*.

The semi-vowels *ъ* and *й* are sufficiently distinct; the former (ѣ) can only be used after a consonant, the latter (й) only after a vowel, as we have already seen, § 9.

88.—The feeble consonants (б, в, г, д, ж, з), Consonants. which, at the end and in the middle of a word before a strong letter, are articulated like their corresponding strong consonants (п, ф, к or х, т, ш, с, § 10), may be distinguished from the latter by an inflection of the words. Thus:

we write :	{	бобъ, <i>a bean</i> , and цѣпъ, <i>a flail</i>,	{	.....	{	боба and цѣпа.
		ловъ, <i>capture</i> , and графъ, <i>a count</i>,		.....		лѡва and графа.
		кругъ, <i>a circle</i> , and крюкъ, <i>a hook</i>,		.....		крѹта and крюка.
		богъ, <i>God</i> , and духъ, <i>spirit</i> ,		on account of <i>gen. sing.</i>		Бѡга and дѹха.
		кладъ, <i>treasure</i> , and братъ, <i>brother</i>.		.....		клáда and брáта.
		ножъ, <i>a knife</i> , and ковшъ, <i>a scoop</i>,		.....		ножá and ковшá.
		тузъ, <i>the ace</i> , and усъ, <i>the mustache</i>,		.....		тузá and усá.
		трѹбка, <i>a pipe</i> , and шапка, <i>a cap</i>,		.....		трѹбокъ and шапокъ.
		лáвка, <i>a bench</i> , and фѣйфка, <i>a blow-pipe</i>,		.....		лáвокъ and фѣйфокъ.
		бѹлка, <i>sentry-box</i> , and ѹтка, <i>a duck</i> ,		on account of <i>gen. pl.</i>		бѹдокъ and ѹтокъ.
		крѹжка, <i>a goblet</i> , and мѹшка, <i>little fly</i>,		.....		крѹжекъ and мѹшекъ.
		сказка, <i>a tale</i> , and плáска, <i>a dance</i>,		.....		сказокъ and плáсокъ.

In cases where the change of inflection fails to indicate the doubtful letter, recourse must be had to etymology to discover the root from which the derivative word is formed. Thus:

we write :	{	прѡсѣба, <i>a prayer</i> (and not прѡзѣба), . . .	{	просить, <i>to pray</i> , from the root <i>прос.</i>
		женѣтъба, <i>marriage</i> (and not женидѣба), . .		женѣтъ, <i>to marry</i> (in <i>Sl. жени́тва</i>).
		бѹдочникъ, <i>a sentry</i> (and not бѹточникъ), .		бѹдка, <i>sentry-box</i> , <i>gen. pl.</i> бѹдокъ.
		присѹтствіе, <i>presence</i> (and not присѹдствоіе), .		суть, <i>3d pers. pl.</i> of есмь, <i>I am</i> .
		жжѣнный, <i>burnt</i> (and not жжѣнный), . . .		жжѣшь, <i>2d pers. sing.</i> of жгу, <i>I burn</i> .
		рябчикъ, <i>a hazel-hen</i> (and not ряпчикъ), . .		рябѡй, <i>with variegated feathers</i> .
		грѣчевый, <i>of buck-wheat</i> (and not грѣшневый),		грѣча, <i>buck-wheat</i> , ч being immutable.
		свѣчникъ, <i>a candlestick</i> (and not свѣшникъ),		свѣча, <i>a candle</i> , from свѣтъ, <i>light</i> .
		гудочникъ, <i>violinist</i> (and not гудѡшникъ), . .		гудѡкъ, <i>violin</i> , т and к change into ч.
		ветѡшникъ, <i>rag-gatherer</i> (and not ветѡчникъ),		ветѡшь, <i>a rag</i> , from вѣтъхъ, <i>old</i> .
		наѹшникъ, <i>slanderer</i> (and not наѹчникъ), .		ѹхо, <i>the ear</i> , х changes into ш.
		Волѡшскій, <i>Walachian</i> (and not волѡжскій),		Волѡхъ, <i>a Walachian</i> , х ch. into ш.
		Вѡлжскій, <i>of the Volga</i> (and not вѡлжскій),		Вѡлга, <i>the Volga</i> , г changes into ж.

The present orthography of the word порѹчникъ, *a lieutenant* (from порѹчить, *to commit*, from рука, *the hand*), is not in conformity with its etymology; for the termination being чикъ (as in потáтчикъ, *an indulger*, from потакáть, *to connive*, from такъ, *thus*), it ought to be written порѹтчикъ, as some persons still write it. Another exception is свáдѣба, *wedding* (formerly свáтъба), from свáтать, *to ask in marriage*.

The word столпъ, *a column*, is written in Slavonic with a п, as also its derivatives: стѡлпникъ, *the stylite*; столпотворѣніе, *the building of the tower of Babel*; but in Russian it is written with a б, столбъ, a consonant which is retained in the words столбовой, *columnar*; столбчакъ, *basalt*; столбнякъ, *tetanus*; остоленѣть, *to be stupefied*.

З. — The feeble consonant *з* of the preposition *въ* or *во*, *изъ*, *низъ*, *разъ* or *ро*, is changed, in derivatives, before the strong consonants *к*, *п*, *т*, *х*, into its corresponding strong consonant *с*; thus we write: *вспомнить*, *to remember*; *воспитаніе*, *education*; *исключить*, *to exclude*; *исходить*, *to descend*; *расторгнуть*, *to tear up*; *рѣпись*, *a catalogue* (instead of *въспомнить*, *возпитаніе*, *изключить*, *низходить*, *разторгнуть*, *рѣпись*). Before the strong consonants *с*, *ц*, *ч*, *ш* and *щ*, the letter *з* keeps its form, as in *изстари*, *formerly*; *разцвѣсті*, *to open*; *изчѣзнуть*, *to disappear*; *возшествіе*, *accession*; *разщѣпъ*, *a slit*. The prepositions *безъ* and *чрезъ* in this case remain unchanged; thus we write: *безподобный*, *incomparable*; *чрезчуръ*, *excessively* (and not *бесподобный*, *чресчуръ*). It is the same with the preposition *сѣ*, which retains its form before a feeble consonant, although it then takes the pronunciation of *з*; thus we should write: *сбавить*, *to diminish*; *сдѣлать*, *to make*; *сгонять*, *to drive off*; *сжимать*, *to compress* (and not *збавить*, *здѣлать*, *згонять*, *зжимать*).

Ц. — The compound consonant *ц* cannot be used instead of *mc* or *dc*, when *m* and *d* are radical letters, and *c* belongs to the termination of the word; thus we write: *плѣтскій*, *carnal*, from *плѣть*, *the flesh*; *персидскій*, *Persian*, from the Latin *Persis*, *sidis* (and not *плѣцскій*, *персѣцскій*); but we write: *нѣмецкій*, *German*, from *нѣмецъ*, *a German*; *казацкій*, *Cossack's*, from *казакъ*, *a Cossack*. In the numerals we write *дц*, as: *одѣннацать*, *eleven*; *двѣдцать*, *twenty*, words contracted from the Slavonic *одѣнѣ-на-десять*, *двѣ-десять*.

Щ. — The compound consonant *щ*, in the derivatives, is the commutation of *ск* and *ст*, or else it supplies the place of the consonants *зч*, *жч*, *сч*, as: *вошѣть*, *to wax*, from *воскъ*, *wax*; *умашѣть*, *to anoint*, from *масть*, *balm*; *прикащикъ*, *a clerk*, from *приказъ*, *an order*; *рѣщикъ*, *a cutter*, from *рѣзать*, *to cut*. But the form of the radical letters is retained in the words *счѣстіе*, *happiness*; *считѣть*, *to count*; *счѣтъ*, *разсчѣтъ*, *an account*; *мужчина*, *a man*, which must not be written *щѣстіе*, *щчитѣть*, *щѣтъ*, *разщѣтъ*, though we also write *мущина*.

Ф. Θ. — The consonants *ф* and *θ* are used, the former for Russian words, and such Greek and other words as are

written with *φ*, *f* or *ph*, and the latter for Greek words written with *θ* or *th*; thus we write: *футайка*, a jacket; *фамилія*, a family; *физика*, physics; *Филиппъ*, Phillip; *Фотій*, Photius; and *рѣмъ*, rhythm; *рѣма*, rhyme; *миѳологія*, mythology; *Теодоръ*, Theodore; *Томá*, Thomas.

Doubling of
consonants.

89.—The consonants are doubled in Russian in the following cases: 1) In the words in *никъ*, *ство*, *ный*, *нiй* and *скiй*, the radical of which terminates in *н* or *с*; e. g. *плѣнникъ*, a prisoner, from *плѣнь*, captivity; *искусство*, art, from *искусъ*, an essay; *истинный*, true, from *истина*, the truth; *осенний*, autumnal, from *осень*, autumn; *Русскій*, Russian, from *Русь*, Russia. The same takes place in adjectives in *енный*, and passive participles in *анный*, *янный*, *енный*, *пнный*, e. g. *искусственный*, artificial; *дѣланный*, made; *заслуженный*, merited. These participles must not be confounded with the qualifying and possessive adjectives; as: *учёный*, learned; *заслужёный*, merited; *кожаный*, of skin; *серебряный*, of silver, which are written with a single *н*.—2) In such words as are formed with a preposition, where the initial consonant of the primitive is the same as the final consonant of the preposition; e. g. *беззубый*, toothless; *вводить*, to introduce; *подданный*, subject; *ссылка*, exile.—3) In the preterit of the pronominal verbs, when the verb ends in the consonant *с*; as: *разнёсся*, it has spread itself; *спасся*, he has saved himself.—4) When by the change of a commutable letter two consonants come together, as in the verb *жгу*, I burn, which, by the change of *г* into *ж*, is in the second person *жжѣшь*, and in the passive participle *жжѣнный*; and in *вожжá*, a rein; *вожжáть*, to bridle,

from водѣть, *to lead*, by the change of *ѣ* into *и*.—

5) Lastly consonants are doubled in some foreign words; e. g. аббáтъ, *an abbot*; суббóта, *Saturday*; аккúла, *a shark*; классъ, *a class*; колóссь, *a colossus*; коллѣгія, *a college*; метáллъ, *a metall*, &c.

90.—The *capital* letters (прописныя бѣквы) are employed, generally speaking, in Russian as in English. Thus a capital letter is placed at the beginning of every sentence, of every line of poetry, of all the proper names of men, places, nations, rivers, mountains and winds, as also of all those of a science, an art or a profession, if taken in an individual sense which distinguishes the particular science, art or profession from every other. All titles and ranks joined to a proper name must also be distinguished by an initial capital, and the same is the case with the appellative names of tribunals, companies and corporate bodies.

Capital
letters.

DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES.

91.—The division of words into syllables, when one part has to be carried on from one line to another, is marked by the hyphen, and is performed according to the following rules which are based on the etymology of the words:

1. Monosyllables, as: страсть, *passion*; здравъ, *in health*; чувствъ, *of the senses (gen. pl.)*, cannot be divided.

2. Prepositions and every other affix, whether initial or final, may be separated from the rest of the

word; e. g. от-ра́да, *mitigation*; о-тра́ва, *poison*; без-конéч-ный, *infinite*; востóкъ, *the East*; мед-вѣдь, *a bear*; ра́з-умъ, *reason*; сво́йство, *property*; ям-ши́къ, *a postilion*; зѣм-скій, *terrestrial*; дру́жба, *friendship*; Царь-гра́дъ, *Constantinople*, &c.

3. The compound consonants жѣ, см, as also кс, кз, нс and джс in foreign words, cannot be divided; e. g. ме́-жду, *between*; три́-ста, *three hundred*; Але-ксáндръ, *Alexander*; э-кзáмень, *examination*; кле-псѣдра, *a clepsydra*; Ро́джеръ, *Roger*.

4. The final vowels, as: своя́, *his*; круто́е, *steep*; as well as the terminations of the verbs, as: пою́тъ, *they sing*; стрóятъ, *they build*; жалѣ́етъ, *he regrets*, cannot be separated from the rest of the word.

ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS.

Russian
words.

92.—Every Russian word is written as a single word, if by the loss of one of its component parts the sense would be changed; e. g. соучáстникъ, *an accomplice*; избóранный, *elected*; отчѣ́тъ, *an account*; при́быль, *a gain*; морехóдъ, *the navigation*; водопровóдъ, *an aqueduct*, &c. On this subject the following rules must be observed:

1) The prepositions which are employed both conjointly and separately (§ 76), are written conjointly: а) Before the verbs and words derived from them; e. g. прино́сить, *to bring*; прино́съ, *a gift*; прино́шеніе, *the offering*; прино́ситель, *a bearer*, &c. б) Before such other parts of speech as are not used without the preposition; as: на́выкъ, *the habit*; извѣ́стный, *known*; встарь, *anciently*;

на́взничъ, *backwards*; о́земь, *on the ground*. c) Before nouns, adjectives, pronouns and adverbs as form with the preposition an adverb or a conjunction; e. g. встаринѹ, *formerly*; изъвнѣ, *from without*; сначалаъ, *in the first place*; вслѣдѣ, *in the footsteps*; потомѹ, *hence*. If the noun from which the adverb is formed, is determined by another word, the preposition is written separately; e. g. съ начала вѣка, *at the beginning of the century*; по томѹ случая, *on this occasion*. The adverbs во-пѣрвыхъ, *firstly*, во-вторыхъ, *secondly*; по-ру́сски, *in Russian*; по-солда́тски, *like soldiers*, and others similar, as also the compound prepositions изъ-за́, *from behind*, and изъ-подо́, *from under*, are written with the hyphen (§ 94, 2).

2. The prefix particle *нѣ* is always written conjointly with the pronoun or the adverb following; as: нѣкто, *some one*; нѣкоторый, *some*; нѣкогда, *once*.

3. The particle *ни* is written conjointly in the words никто́, *nobody*; ничто́, *nothing*; нигдѣ, *nowhere*; никуда́, *nowhere*; никогда́, *never*; никакъ́, *not at all*, and separately in all other words; as: ни кото́рый, *none*; ни зерна́, *not a grain*.

4) The negative *не* is written separately before verbs and the circumstantial adverbs; as: не смѣю, *I dare not*; не здѣсь, *not here*, with the exception of verbs whose proper meaning is changed by the negative *не*, or which are not used without the negative; as: не доставать, *to be wanting*; ненави́дѣть, *to hate*; недо́вѣрять, *to distrust*. It is written conjointly with nouns, qualifying adjectives and adverbs, when the negation refers to the object

or to the quality, and not to the verb; e. g. *неравенство нравовъ быва́етъ причи́ною спо́ровъ*, *dissimilarity of character is the cause of the quarrels*; *несно́сная ску́ка уби́ваетъ меня́*, *an unbearable ennui is killing me*; *я гуляю́ неохото́ю*, *I walk against my will*; and also when the noun has no meaning without the negation; e. g. *не́топырь*, *a bat*; *негодя́й*, *a good-for-nothing*; *не́дугъ*, *a disease*. With the participles the negative *не* is written conjointly when, like the adjectives, they serve to determine the nouns; and separately when, like the verbs, they have a complement; e. g. *незна́ющий челове́къ*, *an ignorant man*; *челове́къ, не зна́ющий сво́ихъ обяза́нностей*, *the man who is ignorant of his duties*.

5. The particle *бы* or *бъ* is written conjointly only in the conjunctions *чтобы́* (or *чтобъ́*) and *дабы́*, *that*; everywhere else it is written separately. It is necessary to distinguish the conjunction *чтобы́* from the pronoun *что* with *бы́*; e. g. *жела́ю, чтобы́ онъ далъ тебѣ́ эту́ кни́гу*, *I wish him to give you this book*; *что бы́ далъ я за́ эту́ кни́гу*, *what would I have given for this book!* In the latter case *бы́* is written separately.

6. The conjunction *уже́* or *ужъ́* is conjointly written in the words *уже́* or *ужъ́*, *already*; *да́же*, *even*; *ни́же́*, *not even*, and separately in the other words; as: *или́ же́*, *or even*; *одна́ко же́*, *however*; *тотъ же́*, *the same*. It is also written conjointly in the copulative conjunction *та́кже*, and the adverb *то́же*, *too*; but it is written separately in the comparative conjunction *та́къ же́*, *as well*, and in the pronoun *то́*.

же, *the same*; е. г. онъ такъ же хорошó пишеть, какъ читáеть, *he writes as well as he reads*: онъ такъ же дворяни́нъ, *he is also gentleman*; я бо́ленъ и онъ то́же, *I am sick and he too*; я говорю то же, что и вы, *I say the same thing as you*.

93.—Foreign words are written with those letters Foreign words. of the Russian alphabet, which give as closely as possible the pronunciation of these words in the language from which they are borrowed: the rule is the base of the orthography of foreign words. Such are for instance the words: епа́рхiя, *a diocese*; ка́athedра, *the pulpit* (*Gr. ἐπαρχία, κάθηδρα*); сенáторъ, *a senator*; корóна, *a crown* (*Lat. senator, corona*); áжio, *the agio*; карéта, *a carriage* (*Ital. agio, carreta*); футъ, *a foot*; сплiнъ, *the spleen* (from the *English*); актёръ, *an actor*; меда́ль, *a medal* (*Fr. acteur, médaille*); брýстверъ, *the parapet*; кýчеръ, *a coachman* (*Germ. Brustwehr, Kutscher*); ватерпáсъ, *a level*; фарвáтеръ, *the channel* (*Dutch: waterpas, vaarwater*); вéнзель, *a cipher*; трактiръ, *an eating-house keeper* (*Pol. wózel, traktyer*). Some of these words in passing into the Russian language have taken terminations peculiar to it, while others have undergone an alteration both in their pronunciation and orthography; such are: фитiль, *a match*; фона́рь, *a lanthorn* (*mod. Gr. φωτίλ, φανάριον*); алтáрь, *an altar*; мрáморъ, *marble* (*Lat. altare, marmor*); яхта, *a yacht*; ми́чманъ, *a midshipman* (from the *English*); шпáга, *a sword* (*Ital. spada*); салфéтка, *a napkin*; табакёрка, *a snuff-box* (*Fr. serviette, tabatière*); бiржа, *the exchange*; та-рélка, *a plate* (*Germ. Börse, Teller*); шкiперъ,

master of a merchantship; шлюзъ, *a sluice* (*Dutch: schipper, sluis*), &c.

The same thing takes place in the Greek and Latin proper names; as: Алексáндръ, *Alexander*; Николáй, *Nicholas*; Филипъ, *Philip*; Пáвелъ, *Paul*; Елéна, *Helen*; Áвгустъ, *Augustus*; Ю́лий, *Julius*; Натáлія, *Nataly*. Some follow the pronunciation of both Greek and Latin; as: Омíръ and Гомéръ, *Homer*; Алкивіáдъ and Алцибіáдъ, *Alcibiades*; Фивъ and Фебъ, *Phæbus*; Віóтія and Беóція, *Beotia*. Others are formed from the Greek or Latin genitive; as: Віáнтъ, *Bias*; Цицерóнъ, *Cicero*; Артемíда, *Artemis*; Пліáда, *the Iliad*; Венéра, *Venus*; Церéра, *Ceres*.

The proper names of lands, countries, rivers, towns and other names of modern geography, some retain their Latin denomination; as: Гермáнія, *Germany*; Áвстрія, *Austria*; Сици́лія, *Sicily*; Неáполь, *Naples*; Флорéнція, *Florence*; Везúвій, *Vesuvius*, &c. Others are written as they are pronounced in the language to which they belong; as: Лондо́нъ, *London*; Чéльсѣ, *Chelsea*; Гриничъ, *Greenwich*; Мю́нхенъ, *Munich*; Ма́йнцъ, *Mayence*; Брю́ссель, *Brussels*; Ма́асъ, *the Meuse*; Шéльдѣ, *the Scheldt*; Рей́нъ, *the Rhine*; Кордо́ва, *Cordova*; Хéресъ, *Xeres*; Бадахóсъ, *Badajoz*; Схевени́нгенъ, *Schevening*; Кéльнъ, *Cologne*; Рéгенсбургъ, *Ratisbon*; Лѣ́гтпхъ, *Liege*; А́хенъ, *Aix-la-Chapelle*; Карлсру́э, *Carlsruhe*; Піачéнца, *Piacenza*; Ливóрно, *Leghorn*; Бордо́, *Bordeaux*; Марсéль, *Marseille*; Лоáра, *the Loire*, &c. Some of these names have passed into the Russian through another language; such

are: Пари́жъ, *Paris* (from the Italian *Parigi*); Римъ, *Rome* (from the Polish *Rzym*); Копенга́генъ, *Copenhagen* (from the German *Kopenhagen*, instead of the Danish *Kiøbenhavn*). Some German names of countries and towns inhabited by Slavonian tribes have been replaced by Slavonic names; as: Вѣна, *Vienna*; Бресла́влъ, *Breslau*; Торýнь, *Thorn*; Львовъ, *Lemberg*; Вѣнгрія, *Hungary*, and some others.

The proper names of historical persons and others in modern languages are written in Russian according to the pronunciation of the language to which they belong; such are the English names: Шéкспиръ, *Shakespeare*; Бéйронъ, *Byron*; Юмъ, *Hume*; Джóнсонъ, *Johnson*; Ньýтонъ, *Newton*; the French names: Ршшелъё, *Richelieu*; Давý, *Davoust*; Руссо́, *Rousseau*; Роллénъ, *Rollin*; Делíль, *Delille*; the German names: Блúхеръ, *Blücher*; Вíландъ, *Wieland*; Гёте, *Gæthe*; Гáйднъ, *Haydn*; the Italian names: Херубíни, *Cherubini*; Чимарóза, *Cimarosa*; the Polish names: Чарторýскíй, *Czartoryski*; Потóцкая, *Potocka*; Нѣмцéвичъ, *Niemcewicz*, &c.

We may here remark that the proper names of the Russian language, the alphabet of which differs from that of the other European tongues, ought to be written in each foreign language in such a manner as to give as closely as possible the Russian pronunciation. Thus the Russian proper names: Кара́мзинъ, Пу́шкинъ, Держáвинъ, Шишкóвъ, Жукóвскíй, Мещéрскíй, Чичéринъ, Каза́нь, Вязьма, Ржевъ, Житоми́ръ, are written in English: *Karamzin*, *Pushkin*, *Derzhavin*, *Shishkof*, *Zhukovski*, *Mestcherski*, *Tchitcherin*, *Kazan*, *Viazma*, *Rzhev*, *Zhitomir*, in French: *Karamezine*, *Pouchekine*, *Derjavine*, *Chichekof*, *Foukovski*, *Mestcherski*, *Tchitchérine*, *Kazan*, *Viazma*, *Rjev*, *Jitomir*; in German: *Karamsin*, *Puschkin*, *Dershawin*, *Schischkow*, *Shukowski*, *Mejschjcherski*, *Tschitscherin*, *Kasan*, *Wajma* or *Wäma*, *Rshev*, *Shitomir*, and

the same in other languages. Exceptions will be found to this rule in certain proper names which have been adopted long ago; as: Москв́а, Санктпетербурѓ, Варш́ава, Мит́ава, and some others; in English: *Moscow, Saint-Petersburg, Warsaw, Mittau*; in French: *Moscou, Saint-Petersbourg, Varsovie, Mittau*; in German: Мос́кау, Ст. Петербурѓ, Варш́ау, Мит́ау. See the particular Vocabularies of the *Parallel Dictionaries of the Russian, French, German and English languages*.

ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS.

94.—The *orthographic signs* (зна́ки правописа́ния) of the Russian language are: the *accent* (ударе́ние), the *hyphen* (едини́тельный знакъ or черто́чка), the *sign of brevity* (кра́тка́я) and the *diæresis* (надстро́чное двоесто́чие).

1. The *accent* (') serves to distinguish the homonyms or words which though written alike have a different meaning, as also the similar inflections of the words; as: за́мокъ, *a castle*, and замо́къ, *a lock*; по́дать, *the tax*, and пода́ть, *to give*; сто́ить, *it costs*, and стои́ть, *he is up*; выхо́дить, *to obtain*, and выходи́ть, *to go out*; сло́ва, *of the word* (*gen. sing.*), and слова́, *the words* (*nom. plur.*). The accent is further placed on the relative pronoun что́, to be distinguished from the conjunction что; e. g. зна́ешь ли что́ тебѣ́ полезно, *dost thou know what is useful to thee?* and зна́ешь ли, что́ тебѣ́ полезно уче́ние, *dost thou know that study is useful to thee?*

2. The *hyphen* (-) is used to mark the connection between two or more words; e. g. Алекса́н-

дро-Нéвская Лáвра, *the monastery of St-Alexander Nevsky*; генерáль-маіóръ, *major general*; штабъ-офицёръ, *field officier*; Ивáнь-да-Мáрья, *cow-wheat*. The hyphen is also used with the adverbs formed from the prepositions *vo* and *no*, with the compound prepositions (§ 92. 1), and with the particle *mo*; as: какъ-то, *such as*; что-то, *something*. It is also used at the end of a line, when a part of a word has to be carried on to the line following.

3. The *sign of brevity* (v) is placed over the vowel *u* (ü), converting it into a semi-vowel, which joined with the preceding vowel forms only a syllable; as: мой, *my*; сей, *this*; нейдётъ, *he does not go*; найтѣ, *to find*. This mark is also used in prosody to indicate the short syllables, as we shall see when speaking of Russian versification.

4. The *diæresis* (..) is a double dot which is placed over the vowel *e* (ë), when it has the sound of *io* or *o*; e. g. слёзы, *tears*; жёлтый, *yellow*. The letter *ë* is also used as the equivalent of the French *eu* and the German *ü*, as in the words Монтескьё, *Montesquieu*; актёръ, *player* (*Fr. acteur*); Гёте, *Gæthe* (*Germ. Göthe*).

MARKS OF PUNCTUATION.

95.—The *marks of punctuation* (знаки препинанія) are the same in Russian as in English, viz: the *comma* (запятая ,), the *semicolon* (точка съ запятою ;), the *colon* (двоеточіе :), the *full stop or period* (точка .), the *note of interrogation* (знакъ

вопросительный ?), the *note of exclamation* (знакъ восклицательный !), the *points of suspension* (знакъ пресѣкательный), the *dash* (знакъ мыслеотдѣлительный or тире —), the *parenthesis* (вмѣстительный знакъ or скобки ()), the *inverted commas* or *quotation* (внóсный знакъ or кавычки « ») and the *paragraph* (крáсная стрóка). The use of these marks of punctuation is nearly the same in all languages.

FOURTH PART

PROSODY.

96.—Prosody consists of two parts: 1) *orthoepy* (сло́гоуда́ре́ние), or the measured pronunciation of syllables and words, and 2) *versification* (стихо́сло-же́ние), which teaches the laws of writing poetry correctly.

Division of
prosody.

ORTHOEPY.

97.—In the pronunciation of words attention must be paid not only to the particular articulation of each of the letters of which they may be composed, but also and especially to the accented syllable. The *prosodical* or *tonic accent* (уда́ре́ние, § 12) is a stress of the voice which is heard in one of the syllables of a polysyllabic word, so that this syllable shall strike the ear more forcibly than the others and appear to predominate over them. Thus in the words вода́, *water*; не́бо, *the sky*; свобо́да, *liberty*; превосхо́дительно́ство, *excellency*, the voice is raised in the syllables да́, не́, бо́, ду́. The accented syllable is, in prosody, called *strong* or *long*, and the unaccented syllables *weak* or *short*.

Prosodical
or tonic
accent.

Place of the
accent.

98.—The accent, in polysyllabic words, is found:
1) on the radical syllable: вѣдать, *to know*; вѣдо-
мость, *information*; невѣжество, *ignorance*; исповѣ-
дать, *to confess*; увѣдомить, *to inform*; извѣстie,
news; 2) on the termination: вѣдунъ, *a sorcerer*;
вѣстовой, *orderly*; извѣститъ, *to notify*; заповѣднѡй,
interdicted; 3) on the preposition: вѣвѣдать, *to ex-
plore*; заповѣдь, *commandment*; повѣсть, *a tale*;
сѡвѣсть, *conscience*; 4) on the prefix in compound
words: бѣговѣститъ, *to ring to church*.

These examples show that the accentuation of words in Russian is very variable; and practice and the dictionary can alone enable us to place the accent correctly, as no fixed rules on the subject have hitherto been discovered. We may however remark that a word, when standing alone, may be accented differently to what it is, when joined to other words; thus the pronouns at times lose their accent; again, the nouns and the numerals which have the moveable accent, in the other cases often transfer it to the preposition; in like manner the apocopated adjectives and the verbs transfer it to the negative; e. g. чтѣ отцѣ твоего и матерѣ твою, *honour thy father and thy mother*; друзѣ мои, *my friends*; по берегу, *along the shore*; за моремъ, *beyond the sea*; онъ не веселъ, *he is not gay*; я не бралъ, *I have not taken*. We may here repeat, what we have already indicated in the declensions and conjugations, that, in the change of inflections, the accent is often transferred from one syllable to another.

VERSIFICATION.

99.—The Russian versification, which, like that of England and Germany, is based on the prosodical accent, is termed *tonic* versification; while that of French language and various other modern tongues, depending on the number of syllables employed, is called *syllabic*, and that of the Greeks and Romans, which is based on quantity or the length and brevity of the syllables, is termed *metrical*.

100.—In the tonic versification the verses are also measured by *feet*, as in Greek and Latin. The *foot* (стопа) or *metre* (размѣръ), in Russian poetry, is formed by the union of two or three syllables, one of which has the prosodical accent. The feet employed in the structure of Russian verse are six in number, viz:

1. The *iambus* (ямбъ), composed of two syllables with the prosodical accent on the last, ∪—: зима́, весна́.

2. The *choreus* (хорей) or *trochee* (трохей), consisting of two syllables with the accent on the first, ∪—: лѣто, осень.

3. The *pyrrhic* (пиррихий), formed of two unaccented syllables, ∪∪: such are the two first syllables of беспо́лезный. The pyrrhic in the middle of a line is used instead of an iambus or a trochee.

4. The *dactyl* (дактиль), formed of three syllables with the accent on the first, ∪∪∪: па́лица, ра́достный.

5. The *amphibrach* (амфибрахий), formed of three syllables with the accent on the second, ∪—∪: причи́на, цѣлѹю.

6. The *anapæst* (анáпестъ), formed of three syllables with the accent on the last, ∪ ∪ -: чело́вѣкъ, вре́менá.

Denomina-
tion of the
verses.

101.—The verse or line of poetry takes its name from the nature of the feet of which it is composed. There are verses of six, five, four, three, two feet, and even of one, which are termed *iambic*, *choraic*, *dactylic*, *amphibrachic*, *anapæstic*, *dactylo-choraic*, *anapæsto-iambic*, according as they may be formed of a single one of these metres or of a combination of several. The lines which have not the same number of feet are termed *free* verses (во́льные стихи́).

The verses most commonly employed in modern Russian poetry are the following:

1. The *hexameters* or the *dactylo-choraic* verses of six feet, of which the four first are dactyls or trochees, the fifth a dactyl, and the sixth a trochee. This line is an imitation of the Greek and Latin hexameter, from which it differs only in the employment of trochees instead of spondees, which do not exist in Russian. It is used in epic poems, especially in such as are translations from the ancient languages. Ex.

— ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ ∪ | — ∪ |

Гѣкторъ геро́й съ колесни́цы съ ору́жіемъ спря́нулъ на зѣмлю;
О́стрыя ко́пья коле́бля, потѣкъ по ряда́мъ ополче́ній.
Въ бо́й распаля́я Троя́нъ; и возжѣ́тъ жесто́кую сѣчу;
Всѣ обрати́лись отъ бѣ́гства и ста́ли въ лицѣ́ Аргивя́намъ.

Гибди́чъ.

2. The *iambic* verses of six feet, or *alexandrine* (александрійскіе), are used in great compositions, such as epic and didactic poems, tragedies, comedies, satires, epistles, elegies, idyls, &c.; e. g.

У- — | У- — | У- — | У- — | У- — | У- — |

Ужé блѣднѣетъ день, скрывáясь за горóю;
Шумящія сгадá толпятся надъ рѣкóй.

Жуковскій.

3. The *iambic* verses of five feet, but seldom used; e. g.

Ты говоришь, что мучусь надъ стихóмъ,
Что не пишу́ его, а сочиняю.

Князь Вяземскій.

The *iambic* verse of five feet is sometimes used alternately with that of six; e. g.

Какое торжество готóвить дрéвній Римъ?
Куда текúть наро́да шумны вóлны?

Батюшковъ.

4. The *iambic* verses of four feet are used in odes and other lyrical poems; and those of three, two and even a single foot, in songs and other light compositions; e. g.

О ты, что въ горести напрáсно
На Бóга рóпщешь, человѣкъ!
Внимáй, коль въ рéвности ужáсно
Онъ къ Гóву изъ тучи рекъ.

Ломоносовъ.

Ужé со тмóю нóщи
Простѣрмась тишинá;
Выхóдитъ изъ-за рóщи
Печáльная луна́.

Капнистъ.

Игра́й, Аде́ль,
 Не знай печа́ли!
 Ха́ри́ты, Ле́ль
 Тебя́ вѣнча́ли.

Ал. Пу́шкинъ.

Ступа́й,
 Сзыва́й
 Съ лѣсо́въ
 Всѣхъ псовъ
 На край
 Ай, ай!

Держа́винъ.

5. The *free iambic* verses are employed in fables, tales, epigrams, epitaphs, inscriptions, &c.; e. g.

Въ прихо́жей на полу́,
 Въ углу́,
 Пусто́й мѣшо́къ валя́лся.
 У са́мыхъ низки́хъ слугъ
 Онъ на обти́рку ногъ нерѣ́дко помыка́лся;
 Какъ вдру́тъ
 Мѣшо́къ нашъ въ че́сть попа́лся,
 И весь черво́щами набитъ:
 Въ окóванномъ ларцѣ́ въ сохрáнности лежи́тъ.

Кры́ловъ.

6. The *choraic* or *trochaic* verses of six, five, four, three and two feet, sometimes of the same length and sometimes of a different length, are used in various poems. The choraics of four feet are chiefly used in songs; e. g.

— — — — —
 — — — — —

Нѣтъ подру́ги нѣжной, нѣтъ преле́стной Лилы́!
 Всѣ оспро́тѣло!
 Плачь, Любо́вь и Дру́жба! плачь, Гиме́нь уны́мый!
 Сча́стье улетѣ́ло!

Ба́тюшковъ.

Слѣвсья, Алексѣандръ, Елисаветѣа,
До вечерней тихихъ дней заріи;
И сіяніе въ страну полсвѣта
Съ высоты престола распростри.

Бобрѣвъ.

Стѣнетъ сізый голубѣчекъ,
Стѣнетъ онъ и день и ночь;
Миленькій его дружѣчекъ
Отлетѣлъ надѣлго прочъ.

Дмитріевъ.

Всѣхъ цвѣтѣчковъ бѣлѣ
Рѣзу я любилъ;
Ею тѣлько въ полѣ
Взоръ мой веселилъ.

Дмитріевъ.

Мы сердцѣми
И слезѣми
Мѣлимъ васъ,
Бѣги гнѣва
И Эрѣва,
Въ страшный часъ.

Карамзинъ.

7. The *dactylic* verses, composed of dactyls alone, are only used with two, three or four feet, when longer they become fatiguing to the ear; e. g.

— 00 — 00 | — 00 | — 00 |
Бѣже! Царѣ храни!
Сильный, державный,
Цѣрствуй на слѣву намъ;
Цѣрствуй на стрѣхъ врагамъ;
Царъ православный.
Бѣже! Царѣ храни!

Жукѣвскій.

О домовитая лѣсточка!
Мѣленька, сізенька птичка!
Грудъ краснобѣла, косѣточка,
Лѣтняя гѣстѣя, пѣничка!

Державинъ.

Рѡза ль, ты рѡзочка, рѡза душистая,
 Встѣмъ ты красавица, рѡза цвѣтокъ,
 Вѣйся, плетіся съ лилеей и ландышемъ,
 Вѣйся, плетіся въ мой пышный вѣнѡкъ.

Баронъ Дельвицъ.

8. The *dactylo-choraic* verses of four, three and two feet, are more commonly met with than the pure dactyls, and are used in songs, odes and other lyric poems; e. g.

— — — | — — — | — — — | — — |

Гдѣ ты, прекрасная, гдѣ обитаешь?
 Тамъ ли, гдѣ пѣсни поѣтъ Филомѣла,
 Крѡткая нѡчи пѣвица,
 Сидя на мѣртовой вѣтви?

Карамзинъ.

Пчѣлка златая,
 Что ты жужжишь?
 Всѣ вокругъ летая,
 Прочь не летишь.

Державинъ.

9. The *amphibrachic* verses of six and five feet are employed in idyls, epistles, elegies; and those of four, three and two feet in various lyrical compositions; e. g.

— — — | — — — | — — — | — — — | — — — | — — — |

Въ часы пированья, при сладостномъ пѣніи струнъ оживлённыхъ,
 Уныніе мрачно на мигъ не оставило мѣлаго гостя.
 Снѣдающа горестъ лежитъ глубоко въ его сѣрдцѣ!
 Умолкните, пѣсни! да чистую радость раздѣлять согласно.

Мѣрзляковъ.

Владыка Морвѣны
 Жилъ въ дѣдовскомъ замкѣ могучій Ордалъ.
 Надъ озеромъ стѣны
 Зубчатые замокъ съ холма возвышалъ.

Жуковскій.

Въ то время съ весною
Любовь насъ ждала:
Въ то время . . . со мною
Подруга жила.

Мих. Дми́триевъ.

10. The *anapæstic* verses from one to four feet are used in odes and also in fables; e. g.

— — — | — — — | — — — | — — — |

Посмотри,
И держи ты въ умъ,
Нѣсь мужикъ пуда три
На продажу свинцѹ въ небольшой котомѣ.

Сумароковъ.

The *anapæstic* line is sometimes used alternately with the *amphibrachic*; e. g.

Не стремись добродѣтель напрасно
Людей отъ неправды унять.
Въ нихъ пороки плодятся всечасно:
Нельзя ихъ ничѣмъ исправлять.

Богдановичъ.

11. The *anapæsto-iambic* verses are oftener employed than the above mentioned; e. g.

— — — | — — — | — — — | — — — |

Ты бѣги, бѣги, нашъ злодѣй отъ насъ;
Не дадимъ тебѣ поругаться намъ.
Ты взгляни, взгляни на солдатъ своихъ
Между реберъ ихъ ужъ трава растётъ.

Шуле́пниковъ.

102.—The *cæsura* (пресѣчѣніе) is a rest which divides the line of poetry into two parts, each of which is called a *hemistich* or half verse. This rest, which is only found in the *iambic* verses of

Cæsura.

six and of five feet, and in the trochaic verses of six feet, requires the word to be finished after the third foot in lines of six feet, and after the second in lines of five. Ex.

Изъ мрачныхъ нѣдръ земныхъ | исхóдитъ бѣрный пламень;
Кустáрники дрожа́тъ, | о ка́мень бѣ́тся ка́мень.

Херáсковъ.

И щитъ и мечъ | броса́ютъ съ знаменáми;
Вездѣ путѣ | покры́ты ихъ ко́стями.

Жуко́вскій.

Здѣсь Гимѣнь при́кованъ, | блѣдный и безгласный,
Гáситъ у гробни́цы | свой свѣти́льникъ я́сный.

Бáтюшковъ.

Though it is not absolutely necessary that the cæsura should be always marked so distinctly, still the syllable terminating the first hemistich can never be united with that commencing the second; thus the cæsura can never come between a preposition and its complement.

Termination
of the
verses.

103.—The syllable terminating a line of poetry may be either strong or accented, or it may be weak or unaccented. In the former case the termination is *masculine*, and in the latter *feminine*; e. g.

Люблѹ, любѣть ввѣкъ бѹду! *fem. term.*

Клянѣте страсть мою, *masc. term.*

Безжа́лостныя дѹши, *fem. term.*

Жесто́кія сердца! *masc. term.*

Кара́мзѣнъ.

From this double termination it results that lines of the same metre have not always the same number of syllables. Iambic verses of six feet have twelve syllables with the masculine termination, and thirteen with the feminine; those of four feet have eight syllables with the masculine and nine

with the feminine. Choraic verses of four feet have seven syllables with the masculine termination, and eight with the feminine. The same rule applies equally to the other verses.

104.—The uniformity of sound in the words terminating lines of poetry forms *rhyme* (рѣзма), which is also *masculine* or *feminine*, according to the termination of the verse; e. g. Rhyme.

Кто́ бѹдетъ принима́тъ мой пѣпель отъ ко́срта?	} <i>masc. rhyme.</i>
Кто́ бѹдетъ безъ тебѣ́, о мѣлая сестра́,	
За грѣбомъ слѣдова́тъ въ оде́ждѣ погребѣ́льной,	} <i>fem. rhyme.</i>
И мѣро пѣлива́тъ надъ ѹ́рною пелѣ́чной?	

Ба́тюшковѣ́.

Rhymes were introduced into the poetry of such modern tongues as could not imitate the Greek and Latin versification, because, the language of poetry differing in them but little from prose, something was requisite to please the ear; in Russian however, where the accent is strongly marked and supplies the place of quantity, rhyme is not absolutely necessary; the same is the case in English and German, while in French rhyme is indispensable. Poetry without rhyme is called *blank verses* (бѣлые стихи́). Verses which in Russian poetry are always written without rhyme, are the hexameters and those imitating metres of the ancient languages.

105.—According to the various combinations of the masculine and feminine rhymes, they are divided into *consecutive* (па́рные стихи́), *alternate* (пере́стѹпные) and *mixed* (смѣшанные). This combination of rhymes is used chiefly in stanzas. A *stanza* or *strophe* consists of a number of verses expressing a complete idea. It varies in length from four to fourteen lines. We here give an example of the strophe of four lines in alternate rhymes, and another of the strophe of fourteen lines, in mixed rhymes and choraic metre. Stanza or strophe.

Бсѣ вокругъ уныло! Чуть зефиръ весѣнный
 Памятникъ лобзаетъ;
 Здѣсь въ жилищѣ плача, тихій смѣрти гѣній
 Рѣзу обрываетъ.

Батюшковъ.

Разъ въ Крещенскій вечерокъ
 Дѣвушки гадали:
 За ворота башмачокъ,
 Снявъ съ ногъ, бросали;
 Снѣгъ полѣли; подъ окномъ
 Слушали; кормили
 Счѣтнымъ кѹрицу зерномъ;
 Яркій воскъ топѣли;
 Въ чашу съ чистою водою
 Клали перстень золотой,
 Сѣржки изумрудны;
 Разстилали бѣлый платъ,
 И надъ чашей пѣли въ ладъ
 Пѣсенки подбѣдны.

Жуковскій.

Poetic
licenses.

102.—In following the above rules of versification the poet is at time compelled to sacrifice some of the minor principles of grammar, to syncopate terminations, and to place words in an inverted order. These sacrifices to number, harmony, rhyme and elegance, are termed *poetic licenses* (стихотворческія вѣольности).

CORRECT CONSTRUCTION

OF THE

EXERCISES

We started for Potsdam on horseback yesterday at six o'clock in the morning. Nothing can be duller than this road; there is nothing but deep sand everywhere and not a single object of interest meets the eye. The view of Potsdam however, and particularly that of Sans-Souci is very fine. We stopped at an hotel, before arriving to the gates of the town. After resting ourselves and ordering our dinner, we entered the town. At the gate our names were written down. On the parade square, opposite the palace, which is adorned with Roman colonnades, the guards were exercising: the men are superb, and the uniforms splendid. The view of the palace from the garden is very fine. The town is generally speaking well built; in the principal street there are several magnificent houses constructed on the plan of the largest palaces of Rome at the expense of the late king: he gave them to any one he chose. At present these vast edifices are empty or only occupied by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under the care of a Russian soldier, who has lived there from the time of the Empress Anne. We had some difficulty in finding him. The decrepit old man was seated in a large arm-chair, and having heard that we are Russians, he extended his hands towards us and exclaimed with a trembling voice: "Glory to God! Glory to God!" He tried at first to speak

Reading-
Exercise.
p. 18.

with us in Russian; but we had difficulty in understanding each other. We were obliged to repeat almost every word. "Let us go into the temple of God", said he, "and let us pray together, though there is no church festival to-day." My heart was filled with devotion, when I saw the door of this church opened, where solemn silence has reigned so long, scarcely broken by the low sighs and the feeble voice of the old man in prayer, who comes every sunday to read in this spot the holiest of books, which prepares him for a happy eternity. In the church every thing is neat and clean. The books and the church ornaments are kept in a trunk. The old man arranges them from time to time reverently praying. "It often grieves me to the heart", said he, "to think that after my death, which cannot be far distant, no one will take care of this church." We remained half an hour in this holy spot; then bidding the venerable old man adieu, we wished him a peaceful death.

Karamzin.

Exercises on
declension of
substantives
p. 58.

Хозяинъ сада и хозяйка дома. Садъ хозяина и домъ хозяйки. Рыканіе львовъ; пѣніе соловья; мычаніе быка, вола и коровы; ржаніе лошадей; лай собакъ; воркованье голубя; карканье вороновъ; кваканье лягушекъ; вой волка; жужжаніе пчѣль, жуковъ и мухъ; бляеніе барановъ и овецъ. Каминъ безъ огня; окна безъ стѣколъ; каша безъ масла; сѣдла безъ стремень; зарядъ безъ пули; острова и луга безъ деревьевъ; поваръ, кучеръ и работники безъ работы; дѣти безъ матери; солдаты безъ ружей; ружья безъ кремней: статуя безъ рукъ и безъ ушей; медвѣжата и львенки безъ шерсти; корабль безъ коекъ; суда безъ вѣселъ; чай безъ сахара и безъ сливокъ. Пукъ перьевъ; дюжина чашекъ, тарелокъ и стакановъ; сотня форелей; десятокъ дынь; множество гусей, утокъ и лебедей; стада скота; табуны лошадей. Мужъ древности, и мужъ жень. Цвѣты садовъ, и цвѣта радуги. Листы бумаги, и листья деревъ. Зубы во рту, и зубья у гребня. Колѣна Израильтянъ, колѣни у человека, и колѣнья растенія. Ловъ сельдей у береговъ Америки былъ очень выгоденъ для Англичанъ, Шведовъ, Голландцевъ и Французовъ.

Советъ друзьямъ. Слава Бѣгу. Горѣ врагамъ. Приказъ войску. Повиновѣніе законамъ. Дай ѣсть гусямъ, курамъ, голубямъ и щенкамъ. Поступать соотвѣтственно правиламъ

чѣсти. Жить прилично состоянію. Законъ, дѣанный какъ дворянамъ, такъ и мѣщанамъ. Протѣвиться желаніямъ дѣтей, и волю родителей. Книжки, перья и тетради принадлежатъ ученикамъ, а не учителямъ. Поля и луга принадлежатъ отцу и матери, а сады, какъ и лѣса, сыновьямъ и дочерямъ. Нравится мужчѣнамъ, и не нравится жѣнщинамъ. Зѣлень нравится глазамъ. Картины нравятся сестрамъ, а цвѣты братьямъ. Полѣзныи отѣчеству; прѣятныи Бѣгу и людемъ; вѣрныи Государю; любѣзныи друзьямъ; мѣлыи дѣтямъ. Человѣкъ познаѣтся по лицу, по голосу, по росту, по походкѣ и по тѣлодвиженіямъ. Туристы путешѣствуютъ по Швейцаріи, Франціи, Италіи, Германіи, Америкѣ и Египту.

Братья купили домъ, сады, деревню и поля, а продали быковъ, коровъ, лошадей и карету. Читаетъ басню, рисовать картину, писать письма, играть пѣсню, чинить перья. Посѣщать братьевъ и сестеръ, матерей и дочерей, отцовъ и сыновей. Купить шляпу и шапку, перчатки и башмаки, чулки и подвязки. Завоеватель побѣдилъ войска, и покорилъ народъ. Пѣтръ разбилъ Шведовъ, завоевалъ Эстляндію и Лифляндію, основалъ городъ Санктпетербургъ, и просвѣтилъ Россію. Россіане побѣждали Татаръ, Турокъ, Шведовъ, Французовъ и Персіанъ. Дожди освѣжаютъ зѣмлю, а холода истребляютъ саранчу.

Дѣти, бѣдьте прилѣжны! Иванъ, прѣиди сюда! Воины, сражайтесь храбро! Бѣже, спаси Царя! Господи, помѣлуй меня!

Ученики пишутъ грифелемъ или перомъ и чернилами. Иванъ играетъ съ Алексѣемъ и съ Василіемъ, а Марья играетъ съ Софьею и съ Любовью. Пирогъ съ миндалемъ; горшокъ съ цвѣтами; кадка съ водою; человекъ съ умомъ и съ гѣніемъ; галерея съ картинами. Города съ кремлемъ и гаванью; деревья съ листьями, цвѣтами и плодами; кивера съ султанами; комната съ дверями; хлѣбъ съ солью; вода съ виномъ; вино съ водою; профессора съ учениками; письмо съ деньгами. Рисовать карандашомъ, писать кистью и красками. Купецъ торгуетъ саломъ, мыломъ, молокомъ, мукою, крупю, виномъ, пивомъ, сукнами, полотнами и кружевами, а сосѣди купца торгуютъ волами, баранами и лошадьми. Дворцы съ башнями; церкви съ колокольнями; дома съ окнами; зданія съ галереями; полки съ знаменами. Горы изобилуютъ золотомъ, серебромъ, мѣдью, желѣзомъ, ртутью и свинцомъ.

Басни о быкѣ и баранѣ, объ ослѣ и соловьѣ; о кузнечикѣ и муравьѣ; о дубѣ и тростникѣ; о лисицѣ и воронѣ, о волкѣ и ягнѣнкѣ. Сказки объ ангелѣ-хранителѣ, объ Иванѣ и Марьѣ; повѣсти о Сергѣи пустынникѣ, о героѣ и гѣниі. Говорить объ играхъ, объ урокахъ, о времени, о мѣстѣ, объ обстоятельствахъ. Въ сочиненіи говорятъ много о чести и безчестіи, о добродѣтели и пороцѣ, о храбрости и малодушіи. Въ водѣ живутъ рыбы, лягушки и слѣзны, а въ лѣсу живутъ львы, медвѣди, лисицы и зайцы.

Книги ученика нравятся учителю. Свѣтъ солнца озаряетъ землю лучами. Цвѣта розы пріятны глазамъ. Друзья человѣчества дѣлаютъ добро людямъ. Въ саду цвѣтутъ розы съ шипами; ибо нѣтъ розы безъ шиповъ. Дѣти умываются водою рѣки. Стаканъ съ водою стоитъ на столѣ комнаты. Слѣзы радости блестятъ въ глазахъ матери. Слава злодѣевъ непродолжительна; но имена благодѣтелей сіяютъ въ вѣчности. Счастье на землѣ состоитъ въ спокойствіи духа и въ чистотѣ совѣсти. Юноши любятъ пѣніе соловья, на берегу ручья, при свѣтѣ луны. Говорить правду есть долгъ дѣтей. Любить Бога сердцемъ и душою. Муравьи и бобры могутъ служить примѣромъ челоуѣку. Поѣздка въ Москву и въ Кіевъ. Входъ въ библіотеку для чтенія. Подай учителю тетрадь со стихами на случай праздника. Надобно вставать утромъ, работать днемъ, отдыхать вечеромъ и спать ночью. Громъ пушекъ и звонъ колоколовъ возвѣстили гражданамъ о прибытіи побѣдителя враговъ отечества.

Exercises on
the adjectives.
p. 83.

Пустой карманъ; карманъ пустъ. Крепкій замокъ; замокъ крепокъ. Вѣрный слуга; слуга былъ вѣренъ. Мягкій воскъ; воскъ мягокъ. Спокойный сонъ; сонъ спокоенъ. Достойный сынъ; сынъ достоинъ. Истинный другъ; другъ истиненъ. Совершенный покой; покой будетъ совершенъ. Прозрачное стекло; стекло прозрачно. Древнее преданіе; преданіе было древне. Тѣплое лѣто; лѣто будетъ тепло. Тупое перо; перо тупо. Вѣтхая хижина; хижина ветха. Синяя бумага; бумага синя. Новые дома; дома новы. Богатыя семьи; семьи были богаты. Красныя знамена; знамена будутъ красны.

Бѣлая бумага; бѣлѣйшая бумага; самая бѣлая бумага. Нева быстра, а Волга быстрѣе. Молоко жидко, а вода жиже. Глубокій ручей; глубочайшая рѣка. Дома высоки, а башни

выше. Хорошій чай; лучшій чай; самый лучшій чай. Собаки малы; кошки меньше; но мыши малѣйшія. Отецъ молодъ; мать моложе; но сестра самая молодая. Сѣно дорога, а солома дороже. Молоко сладко; сахаръ слаще; но медъ самый сладкій.

Бѣловатая бумага; буроватые чернила; черноватая вода; краска сивевата. Буренская коровка; маленькая лошадка; пѣгенькая лошадка; бѣдненькая дѣвочка; старичёкъ старенецъ; старушка добренька. Пребѣлая бумага; бумага бѣлехонька; пресухія дрова; дрова сухощеньки.

Хозяинъ обширныхъ садовъ, и хозяйка новаго дома. Стаканъ хорошей воды и краснаго вина; цѣлые горшки свиного сала и еловой смолы. Дѣлай добро бѣднымъ дѣтямъ и дряхлымъ старикамъ, и не ходи по чужимъ полямъ. Вотъ домъ Князя Долгорукаго; вотъ дворецъ Графини Толстой, а вотъ обширные сады молодыхъ Графовъ Завадовскихъ. Я дивился пріятному пѣнію прошлагодняго соловья. Чинишь лебединое перо тупымъ ножикомъ. Вотъ гусиныя перья, красные карандаши, толстыя тетради, дубовыя линейки и большіе циркули, а вотъ суконные кафтаны, тафтяные платки, шелковые чулки, пуховыя шляпы, тонкія полотна и тончайшія кружева. Люби непорочныя нравы; читай полезныя книги; чтн старыхъ людей; хвали добрыхъ дѣла; береги честнаго и вѣрнаго слугу. Подари новую книгу самому прилежному ученику. Ты хвалишь весеннюю погоду, ясность лѣтнихъ ночей, осеннюю прохладу и зимніе холода. Я уважаю славныхъ мужей и знаменитыхъ полководцевъ древнихъ временъ. Большіе манёвры нынѣшняго года будутъ въ Красномъ Селѣ и на Дудергофской Горѣ.

Онъ выѣхалъ изъ отцава дома, и дѣлаетъ добро сестриной дочери. Онъ продалъ женино имѣніе братнину сыну. Посещать Господни храмы и Божіи церкви. Повиноваться Господней волѣ, и познавать величество Божія имени. Первая Русская Грамматика была написана безсмертнымъ Ломоносовымъ, и Россійская Исторія Николаемъ Михайловичемъ Карамзинымъ. Сраженія съ Французами происходили подъ Бородинымъ и подъ Борисовымъ. Я живалъ въ Новѣгородѣ и въ Бѣльозерѣ. Деревни Княгини Салтыковой лежатъ подъ городомъ Кашинымъ.

Вотъ лѣсъя шуба, соболья шапка, птичье гнѣздó, заячьи мехá и слоновьи зúбы. Пудъ оленьяго мяса, аршинъ воловьей кожи, и фунтъ телячьихъ мозговъ. Не ходи по волчьимъ слѣдамъ, и не входи въ медвѣжью берлогу. Разсужденіе о человѣчьемъ глазѣ и о рыбьей головѣ. Онъ торгу́етъ рыбьимъ клѣемъ, бычачьимъ саломъ, козыими шкурáми и пѣтушьими грѣбнями.

Хвасту́нъ похо́жъ на сою, украшенную павлиньими перьями. Сосѣдовъ братъ пріѣхалъ изъ дальняго города, а сестра изъ дальней деревни. Ива́ново пла́тье узко, но Петро́во ещё́ уже. Добренькая стару́шка живётъ въ сырóмъ до́мѣ, лежащемъ подъ Царицынымъ селомъ. Я купилъ медвѣжью шубу съ бобрóвымъ воротникóмъ, и бобрóвую ша́пку съ шёлковою лѣнтою. Вотъ прекрасная кни́га въ богатомъ софья́нномъ переплѣтѣ. Гдѣ найдёмъ мы примѣръ чистѣйшаго самоотверженія, высшей любви къ отечеству?

Exercises
on the
numerals.
P. 97.

У человѣ́ка оди́нъ язы́къ, оди́нъ носъ, два глаза́, два уха́, двѣ щеки́, двѣ руки́, двѣ ноги́, де́сять па́льцевъ на руке́ и де́сять па́льцевъ на но́гѣ, три́дцать два зу́ба, и семь позвонко́въ. Въ високóсномъ годѣ́ четыре́ времени́, двѣ́надцать мѣсяцевъ́, пятьдеся́тъ двѣ́ недѣ́ли и два́ дня, или́ три́ста шестьдеся́тъ шесть́ дней, или́ во́семь ты́сячь семьсо́тъ во́семьдеся́тъ четы́ре часа́, или́ пятьсо́тъ два́дцать се́мь ты́сячь и со́рокъ мину́тъ. Въ кни́гѣ сто́ листóвъ безъ́ одного́. Оба́ брата́ и обѣ́ сестры́. Полтора́ часа́, и полторы́ мину́ты. Два́ рубля́ съ полови́ною и три́ копѣ́йки съ полови́ною. Въ бе́рковцѣ́ де́сять пудóвъ; въ пудѣ́ со́рокъ фу́нтовъ; въ фу́нтѣ́ три́дцать два́ лóта; въ лóтѣ́ три́ золотника́; въ фу́нтѣ́ девяно́сто шесть́ золотникóвъ.

Двѣ́ пухóвыя шля́пы, три́ шёлковы́я платка́, четы́ре перочинны́я но́жика, пять́ фарфóровыхъ́ ча́шек и шесть́ прекра́сныхъ́ карти́нъ. Си́и два́ чѣ́рные во́рона, тѣ́ три́ бѣ́лыя пера́, мои́ четы́ре но́выя кни́ги; э́ти пять́ рѣ́звыхъ́ дѣ́тей. Оба́ бѣ́дные сироты́ и обѣ́ несчастны́я сироты́. Дво́е слугъ́, трѣ́е мастеровы́хъ, четы́ре дѣ́тей, ше́стеро солда́тъ, дво́и часы́, тро́и очки́, пя́теры но́жницы. Пѣ́рвые полтора́ часа́. Пѣ́рвые со́рокъ дней́; второ́е сто́ ефи́мковъ́, и послѣ́дняя ты́сяча гу́льденовъ́.

Я купилъ одного быка и одну лошадь, одинъ столъ и одно зѣркало. Двадцать одинъ рубль, пятьдесятъ одна копейка. Тысяча и одна ночь. Молодой человекъ тридцати одного года безъ двадцати одного дня. Не суди о человекѣ по одному простѣнку и по одной ошибкѣ. Офицеръ съ двадцатью однимъ солдатомъ. Пётръ Первыи и Екатери́на Вторая́ царствовали въ осьмнадцатомъ вѣкѣ. Шведы уважаютъ Карла Двенадцатаго, а Французы поставили памятникъ Генриху Четвёртому. Статья была писана пятнадцатаго числа Января мѣсяца тысяча восемьсотъ двадцать третьяго года, и происшествіе относится къ шестому вѣку, а именно къ пятьсотъ семьдесятъ третьему году.

Шкапъ съ дюжиною фарфоровыхъ тарелокъ, или съ двѣнадцатью фарфоровыми тарелками. Дрожки, запряжённые парой воронихъ лошадей, или двумя вороними лошадьми; и карѣта, запряжённая шестью рыжими лошадьми, или шестёркою рыжихъ лошадей. Городъ лежитъ отсюда въ тысячу верстъ, село во ста верстахъ, а деревня въ сорокѣ верстахъ. Въ Москвѣ было тысяча шестьсотъ церквей, или сорокъ сороковъ церквей. Я довольствуюсь осмидесятью рублями (или двумя сороками рублѣй) въ мѣсяцъ, то есть девятью стами шестидесятью рублями въ годъ. Онъ не доживётъ до сорока лѣтъ; и она умерла сорока трёхъ лѣтъ. Она довольна сорока копейками, и она удивилась ста картинами. Онъ не можетъ прожить мѣнѣе ста тысячъ рублѣй въ годъ. Городъ съ двумя башнями; комодъ съ шестью ящиками; домъ съ сорока окнами; крѣпость со ста пушками; церковь о пяти главахъ; домъ о трёхъ ярусахъ; деревня съ четырьмя вѣтрянными мельницами. Я люблю равно обоихъ сыновей и обеихъ дочерей. Онъ имѣетъ четверо дѣтей, а она оставила пятеро сиротъ. Мой братъ не могъ сладить съ этими двумя упрямыми лошадьми. Онъ жилъ долго съ своими пятью двоюродными братьями. Къ этому миллиону старыхъ Прусскихъ ефимковъ надобно прибавить тысячу тѣхъ новыхъ рублѣй.

Каждому по сту рублѣй и по сороку копѣекъ. Въ некоторыхъ мѣсяцахъ по тридцати дней, а въ другихъ по тридцати одному дню. Въ каждомъ сараѣ было по двѣ карѣты, а въ каждой карѣтѣ по три мужіины и по четыре жѣнщины. Каждому по сту по девяносту рублѣй и по сороку по пяти копѣекъ.

У насъ по двадцати по семі очковъ. Каждая часть сочиненія продаётся по полутору рублѣ серебрѣмъ.

По утру не должно судить о полудни. Въ первые полдніи онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ четыре часа по полуночи, или въ пять часовъ по полудни. Это случилось въ послѣдніе полгода тысяча восемьсотъ сорокъ четвертаго года. Первые полчаса прошли спокойно. Въ продолженіе первыхъ получаса. За мною было полтораста тысячъ рублѣй годоваго дохода.

Exercises
on the
pronouns.
p. 107.

Я люблю тебя, а ты меня обижаешь. Мы уважаемъ его, а её мы любимъ душевно. У меня много денегъ, а у тебя нѣтъ ни копѣйки. Заступись за него, и понадейся на неё. Посиди со мною, и приходи съ нимъ. Скажи ей, чтобъ она пришла ко мнѣ. Безъ него, безъ ней и безъ васъ жизнь мнѣ скучна. Я не вижу ихъ, а я сдѣлаю всё для нихъ. Мы уважаемъ васъ, а вы забыли насъ. Будь во мнѣ увѣренъ: я поговорю о тебѣ. Мнѣ пріятно быть съ нею. Я не доверяю себѣ, а ты доволенъ собою. Мы бережемъ себя, а они себѣ вредятъ.

Мой братъ, твоя сестра и его сынъ вмѣстѣ учились. Я стараюсь угодить вашему учителю и нашему смотрителю. Мой домъ красивѣе твоего, а твой собака меньше моей. Я живу безъ нихъ, и могу обойтись безъ ихъ помощи. Не хвались своими трудами, а подумай о своихъ лѣтахъ. Подойди къ моему столу, и подарь денегъ своей сестрѣ. Мы говоримъ о своихъ дѣлахъ, а вы занимаетесь своимъ урокомъ. Ученіе горько, но плоды его сладки. Твои сады прекрасны; я удивляюсь ихъ красотамъ.

Видишь ли эту собаку и этого котѣ, этихъ людей и тѣхъ деревьевъ? Въ этихъ земляхъ нѣтъ золота, и въ тѣхъ нѣтъ серебра. Я слышалъ это отъ вашего брата, но я этому не вѣрю. Я хвалю ваше намѣреніе; давно я предвидѣлъ оно. Давно ли ты живешь въ семъ городѣ? Я удивляюсь этому саду, а тотъ лучше. Эти перья тупы; сии дома каменные; тѣ улицы узки. Такіе глаза проницательны; такія дѣла не приносятъ чести. Таковы люди.

Человѣкъ, котораго вы видите, очень умѣнъ. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень пріятна. Я знаю дѣло, о которомъ вы говорите. Вода, которою я моюсь, очень холодна. Берегись того, кто льститъ тебѣ. Тотъ, у кого много дѣла, не думаетъ о забавахъ. Учитесь тому, чего вы не знаете.

Вотъ такое сукно, какое я купилъ. Какое былъ военачальникъ, таковы и воины. Вотъ другъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба. Слушайся того, въ чьемъ домѣ ты жилъ. Вотъ книга, какихъ мало, и случай, каковыя рѣдки.

Который часъ, и въ которомъ часу прийдешь? Какими книгами занимаешься, и какіе люди здѣсь живутъ? Подъ которымъ начальникомъ ты служишь, и какому языку ты учишься? Чьи эти дома? Съ чего позволенія ты вышелъ со двора? Я не видалъ, чью шляпу бросили на полъ. Я не знаю, съ чьими детьми онъ гуляетъ. О чемъ ты заботишься, и чемъ я заслужилъ твою дружбу? Съ чемъ можно поздравить тебя, и отъ чего ты получилъ эти деньги? Сколько верстъ отъ этого города до того? Изъ сколькихъ томовъ состоитъ сіе сочиненіе? По сколько рублей достанется вамъ изъ этой прибыли?

Ты самъ согласишься со мною: самый звукъ его голоса пріятенъ. Я нанимаю сію квартиру у самого хозяина. Самые пороки находятъ у васъ извиненіе. Онъ всегда говоритъ о себѣ самомъ. Вы недовольны собою самими. Мы видѣли её самоё. Самая смерть не страшна. Мы все довольствуемся однимъ жалованіемъ. Такъ думаютъ однѣ женщины. Мы оба хотимъ служить единому Богу. Въ каждомъ собраніи были граждане обою пола. Они разсѣяны по всему свѣту. Надобно привыкать ко всякой пищѣ.

Нѣтъ никого здѣсь; не проси помощи ни у кого. Ты не вѣшь ничего, и это не годится ни къ чему. Учись чемунибудь, и скажи это комунибудь. Я не продамъ своего дома ни за что, и вы продали свой за ничто. Изъ ничего не сдѣлаешь ничего. Въ теченіе нѣсколькихъ мѣсяцевъ онъ ежедневно покупалъ по нѣскольку сотъ душъ.

Объ сестры дурно говорятъ другъ о другѣ. Англичане и Французы ненавидятъ другъ друга. Мы ходимъ гулять другъ съ другомъ. Сіи дома лежатъ одинъ за другимъ. Доски набросаны одна съ другою.

Я дѣлаю добро, сколько я желаю. Ты желаешь учиться. Онъ думаетъ, что знаетъ все науки, и хвастаетъ своими успѣхами. Мы не дерзаемъ вѣрить вашимъ словамъ, хотя вы говорите правду. Мои сосѣди питаются однимъ хлѣбомъ, и уповаютъ на Провидѣніе. Вы торгуете сукномъ, и вы требуете

мно́гаго. Го́лубь ворку́еть; го́рлица сто́нетъ; соба́ка ла́етъ; щёнки бре́шутъ; лягу́шки ква́каютъ; во́роны ка́ркаютъ; лвы́ рыка́ютъ; оле́нь току́еть; ку́ры куда́хчутъ; ко́шка мяучи́тъ; бы́ки мыча́тъ; пче́ла жужжи́тъ; зме́я шипи́тъ; орлы́ трубя́тъ; соловьи́ щебе́чутъ; овцы́ блею́тъ; сви́ный хрю́каютъ; лиси́ца визжи́тъ; осе́ль реве́тъ; калку́нъ кло́хчетъ; перепёлка вава́каетъ; пѣту́хъ кукурека́етъ; со́ро́ка скреко́четъ; попуга́й болта́етъ. Гро́мъ греми́тъ; вода́ кипи́тъ; две́ри скри́пѣтъ; ручьи́ жужжа́тъ; о́гонь трещи́тъ; звѣзды́ сверка́ютъ; со́лнце свѣти́тъ; пче́лы ро́ятся; алма́зы блестя́тъ; сухи́е ли́стья хру́щатъ; вѣте́рь сви́стаегъ; снѣ́гъ та́етъ. Со́лнце оза́ряетъ зѣ́млю свои́ми луча́ми, грѣ́етъ и живи́тъ её. Зе́мля обра́щается́ вокру́гъ со́лнца. Вы нап́расно́ горю́ете.

Я гуля́лъ вче́ра по́ берегу́ рѣ́ки, ко́гда со́лнце сади́лось. Мой се́стра сидѣ́ла подѣ́ деревомъ, ко́торое́ кача́лось вѣ́тромъ. Вче́ра мы мно́го рабо́тали, чита́ли, писа́ли и рисо́вали. Овцы́ мру́тъ отъ́ стужи́. Его́ ма́ть дави́о умерла́. Непри́ятели заперли́ его́ въ́ крѣ́пости. Э́тотъ че́ловѣ́къ ослѣ́пъ, и его́ же́на́ оглохла́. Мои́ дере́вья́ вы́сохли и мои́ цвѣ́ты́ завя́ли.

Москв́а до́лго бу́детъ красова́ться во гла́вѣ́ городо́въ Ру́сскихъ. Ты бу́дешь игра́тъ, и я бу́ду писа́тъ. Росси́йское госу́дарство́ бу́детъ безпрерывно́ возвы́паться, и всегда́ приоб́рѣ́тетъ бо́лье́ си́лы и сла́вы. Вели́кий госуда́рь ни́когда́ не уми́реть.

Дѣ́лай, что тебѣ́ говоря́тъ, и не ду́май упря́миться. Не теря́й наде́жды, и упова́й на Бо́га, Сту́па́йте домо́й, и не толку́йте сто́лько. Не тра́ть вре́мени, и не мучь жи́вотныхъ. Говори́те всегда́ пра́вду, и не спо́рьте о́ пустя́кахъ.

Соловѣ́й поѣ́тъ; ло́шадь рже́тъ; волкъ́ во́етъ. Есть́ звѣ́ри, ко́торые́ спятъ́ всю́ зи́му. Ты берѣ́шь мно́го на се́бя, и я не беру́сь за́ э́то дѣ́ло. Зачѣ́мъ вы́ ми́нете́ э́ту́ кни́гу? Онъ́ живѣ́тъ въ́ Москвѣ́, и слы́ветъ́ богаты́мъ че́ловѣ́комъ. Пасту́хъ стри́жетъ́ овце́; крестя́не пряду́тъ лё́нъ и ткуть́ холстъ. Онъ́ хо́четъ́ спать, и вы́ хоти́те игра́тъ. Мой́ сосѣ́дъ берѣ́гъ меня́, какъ́ родна́го сы́на, и не мо́гъ со мно́ю разста́ться. Непри́ятели сожгли́ мно́гие́ городá; они́ увлекли́сь зло́бою и мщѣ́ниемъ. Пасту́хъ пась́ овце́ на лу́гу. Я пошлю́ за ле́каремъ, и ты́ пришлѣ́шь мнѣ́ де́негъ. Э́тотъ́ го́родъ цвѣ́теть, и онъ́ до́лго бу́детъ цвѣ́сти́ си́лою и богáтствомъ. Я дамъ́

тебѣ кни́гу, а что ты дашь мнѣ? Ты не мо́жешь говори́ть: что онъ дастъ мнѣ за э́то? Не бери́ на себя́ того́, чего́ ты не мо́жешь исполнить. Дѣти, живи́те ми́рно, не кляни́тесь, ни́когда не лги́те, и ве́дите себя́ хороше́нко.

Звѣри ходя́тъ и бѣгаю́тъ, пти́цы лета́ютъ, ры́бы пла́ваютъ, и че́рви ползаю́тъ. Посмотри́, сю́да и́дѣтъ солда́тъ; за нимъ бѣжи́тъ соба́ка. Ви́дишь, какъ бы́стро лети́тъ э́та ла́сточка; онѣ́ все́гда такъ лета́ютъ. Сей моря́къ до́лго пла́валъ по Чѣрному Мо́рю. Что тамъ плыве́тъ на во́дѣ? Жѣны́ Славя́нъ носи́ли во́ду и таска́ли дрова́. Что ты несе́шь въ э́томъ мы́шкѣ? Смотри́, какую́ вяза́нку дрова́ э́тотъ челове́къ тащи́тъ. Ви́дѣли то́гда, чего́ не ви́дѣли до́то́ль.

Неприя́тель рину́лся въ го́родъ и ки́нулся на коры́сть. Мо́лнія засверка́ла. Мо́лнія сверкну́ла, гряну́лъ си́льный громъ, землѣ́ дро́гнула, це́рковь затряса́сь. Братъ мой лёгъ и захра́пѣлъ; онъ гро́мко хра́пну́лъ и проспѣ́лся. Могу́ ли надѣ́яться, что ли́ра моя́ троне́тъ ещё́ ва́ше хла́дное се́рдце? Со́лнце заблѣ́стало, но не надолго́: блесну́ло и скры́лось. Мы́ выбросали́ за о́кно́ весь соръ; въ сорѣ́ мы́ выбросили́ и ва́жную бума́гу.

Про́шлаго го́да я хажива́лъ въ го́родъ. Сокра́тъ говари́валъ. Нѣмцы́ изда́вна жива́ли въ Новѣ́го́родѣ. Живу́щій въ Москвѣ́, я ѣ́зжалъ въ Тро́ницкую Ла́вру. Въ молоды́я лѣ́та я жива́лъ въ дере́внѣ.

Е́сли бы ка́мни говори́ть могли́, онѣ́ научи́ли бы тебѣ́ осто́рожности. Е́сли бы кто́ нибу́дь вошёлъ къ намъ въ э́ту мину́ту, онъ уви́дѣлъ бы насъ въ отча́яніи, и слы́шалъ бы на́ши стена́нія и на́ши вздо́хи. Есть́ ма́ло предме́товъ въ свѣ́тъ, на кото́рые я не обра́щаль бы внима́нія. Не́ было тако́го ка́меннаго се́рдца, кото́рое не излива́лось бы въ слеза́хъ.

Солда́тъ э́тотъ служи́лъ до́лго, и вы́служилъ пенсію́. Не вся́кій вы́служитъ её́ съ таки́мъ отли́чіемъ. Онъ быва́лъ во мно́гихъ сраже́ніяхъ, и вездѣ́ отли́чался блиста́тельною хра́бростью. Особо́енно отли́чился онъ при взя́тіи одної́ непри́тельской баттарѣ́н. Онъ пе́рвый взобра́лся на бру́стверь, уби́лъ непри́тельскаго солда́та и взя́лъ пу́шку. За э́то его́ награди́ли о́рденомъ. Потомъ награжда́ли его́ и други́ми отли́чіями. Тепе́рь отпра́вится онъ въ ро́дину, поседи́тся въ сво́ей семье́, и бу́детъ расказа́ывать о сво́ихъ похода́хъ, какъ хажива́лъ на Ту́рокъ и Францу́зовъ, какъ бива́лъ враго́въ,

какъ терпѣлъ голодь, страдалъ отъ ранъ, и утѣшался мыслію, что слѣжить своему Государю сѣрдцемъ и душою. Уповай на меня.

Exercises
on the
participles.
p. 176.

Человѣкъ, любящій правду, ненавидитъ ложь. Купающееся дитя; собака, бросающаяся на прохожихъ. Купецъ, получаващій товары изъ Лондона, продавалъ ихъ выгодно. Купецъ, получившій товары изъ Лондона, продалъ ихъ выгодно. Страждущій болѣзнію, ищетъ облегченія. Зажгій потухшую свѣчу, и вытри замёрзшее стекло. Слава герою, спасшему своё отечество. Рыкающій левъ, мычашій быкъ, лающая собака, поющій пѣтухъ, воркующій голубь, выражаютъ свои чувства и желанія.

Море, волнуемое вѣтрами, устрашаетъ пловцовъ. Дочь, любимая отцемъ, старается заслуживать его любовь. Должно помогать несчастному, гонимому судьбою и преследуемому неудачами. Это снятое молоко, и вотъ третій табакъ. Это заряженное ружьё. На рынкѣ продаются битые гуси, смоленныя верёвки, откормленные поросята и стриженыя овцы.

Россія обитаема многими народами. Добрые государи любимы своими подданными, и уважаемы соседями. Татары были побѣждены и разбиты на Куликовомъ полѣ. Труды твой будутъ увѣнчаны успѣхомъ. Имена бывають склоняемы, а глаголы спрягаемы. Сей великій полководецъ будетъ чтимъ въ потомствѣ. Москва была разорена и сожжена врагами. Это ружьё заряжено. Эта книга прекрасно переплетена.

Exercises on
adverbs and
gerunds.
p. 181.

Подѣи сюда, ибо я здѣсь живу. Гдѣ вашъ братъ? Его нѣтъ дома. Кудѣ онъ поѣхалъ вчера вечеромъ? Ты судишь умно, а братъ твой судитъ умнѣе. Я хожу шибко, а ты ходишь шибче. Вы говорите по-руски чисто, а сестрица ваша ещё чище. Завтра поѣдемъ мы далѣко, а чрезъ годъ ещё далѣше. Ты поѣшь хорошо, но она поѣтъ лучше. Я прошу васъ убѣдительнѣе. Я благодарю васъ покорнѣе.

Гуляя на берегу рѣки, я наслаждаюсь прохладой вѣтера. Жалѣя о несчастныхъ, старайтесь помогать имъ. Я васъ учу, желая вамъ добра, и надѣясь, что вы успѣете въ наукахъ. Не умѣя сдѣлать чего нибудь, проси совета, не краснѣя. Дѣлай добро, не боясь никого. Не должно есть лёжа. Служа отечеству и умирая за него, мы исполняемъ свой долгъ.

Получивъ письмо ваше, и узнавъ, чего вы желаете, я немедленно отвѣчалъ. Отобѣдавши, останься дома. Написавши письмо, положивши въ кувѣртъ и запечатавши, отдай его на почту. Пришедши домой, я съѣлъ писать. Женившись, онъ поѣхалъ въ деревню. Просидѣвши часъ у него, я пошелъ домой; раздѣвшись и легши, я скоро уснулъ.

Безъ надежды нельзя жить въ свѣтъ. Отъ рѣки до лѣсу Exercises on the prepositions, p. 185. двѣ версты. О чѣмъ вы говорите? Мы трудимся для общаго блага. Между домомъ и садомъ пространный дворъ съ конюшнями. Бога ради не унывай. Любовь къ государю и отечеству. Онъ живѣтъ у своего дяди. Солдатъ выскочилъ изъ-за куста. Лучъ солнечный проникаетъ сквозь воду. Этотъ человекъ при смерти. Птица летаетъ подъ облаками. Я положилъ книгу подъ столъ. Садитесь за столъ, и сидите за столомъ. Братъ мой ѣдетъ въ Москву, потому что его жена живѣтъ въ Москвѣ. Орелъ сидитъ на деревѣ. Эта рюмка разбилась на мелкія части. Я досажуюсь на брата моего за его лѣность. Не заботься о чужихъ дѣлахъ. Мой другъ ушибся объ уголъ стола. Вода течетъ съ кровли. Вотъ деревья съ листьями, но безъ цвѣтовъ. Эта собака будетъ съ корову. Дѣти бѣгаютъ по двору и по саду. Мы работали отъ перваго по пятое число Августа. Онъ носитъ трауръ по своему брату.

Мой дядя родился и жилъ въ Москвѣ, а не въ Твери. Знаешь ли что нашъ учитель нездоровъ? Exercises on the conjunctions, p. 188. Ежели вы не придете, то я осержусь. Спроси у него, хочетъ ли онъ ѣхать, или намъ рѣшается остаться дома. Онъ заботится болѣе о братѣ нежели о сестрѣ. Приятнѣе дѣлать добро другимъ, чѣмъ самому получать благотворенія. Пусть онъ придетъ; пускай они уѣдутъ. Да солнце васъ не застанетъ на ложѣ. Да здравствуетъ Царь. Чѣмъ прилежнѣе ты будешь учиться, тѣмъ легче будетъ для тебя ученіе.

Зима пріятна. Люди суть смертны. Новгородъ былъ Exercises on the concord of words, p. 192. богатъ. Россія есть обширная имперія. Волга есть царица рѣкъ Русскихъ. Пріятель мой, вы будете довольны. У насъ есть большіе запасы. У меня завтра будутъ деньги. Ея Величество (Императрица) выѣхала. Его Превосходительство (Генералъ) уѣхалъ. Его Императорское Высочество (Великій Князь) былъ доволенъ. Географія и Исторія суть

весьма полезныя знанія. Молчать трудно. Сколько было тамъ дѣтей? Москва знаменита; городъ Москва знаменитъ. Китай многолюденъ; государство Китай многолюдно. У него есть тридцать одна лошадь. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень забавна. Вотъ человекъ, чьиими трудами пользуемся.

Exercises on
dependence
of words.
p. 200.

Вода есть стихія. Александръ Македонскій былъ великій полководецъ. Татары были свирѣпы. Мои дѣдъ офицеръ; мои дѣдъ былъ тогда офицеромъ. Говорятъ, что кометы были или еще будутъ планетами.

Дождь освяжаетъ землю. Злодѣи ненавидятъ честныхъ людей. Буря, опустошившая наши поля, разорила многихъ поселянъ. Говори всегда правду. Мой братъ былъ боленъ всю зиму. Я ѣхалъ цѣлую версту верхомъ. Тебя хвалятъ за прилежаніе. Онъ ударился объ стѣну. Мы сидимъ въ водѣ по шею. Сынъ ростомъ съ отца, и дочь почти съ мать.

Скупецъ предпочитаетъ деньги славы, а воинъ славу деньгамъ. Молнія предшествуетъ грому. Дивлюсь вашему терпѣнію. Нравятся ли вамъ эти картины. Не мсти твоему непріятелю, и дѣлай добро обидѣвшему тебя. Быть чуду. Лѣтись горючимъ слезамъ. Ребенку хочется пить. Сильному человеку не прилично обижать слабого. Подражаніе Иисусу Христу. Любовь къ добродѣтели и ненависть къ пороку.

Вижу глазами, осязаю руками, слышу ушами, обоняю носомъ, вкушаю языкомъ. Изманилъ былъ взять Суворовымъ, и Очаковъ Потемкинымъ. Этихъ офицеровъ все называютъ героями. Большой едва шевелитъ губы (или губами). Гнушаюсь обманомъ и ложью. Здѣсь дышатъ чистымъ воздухомъ. Пожертвованіе жизнью за Государа и отечество. Онъ добръ сердцемъ, но слабъ головою. Утромъ надобно вставать, днемъ работать, вечеромъ отдыхать, и ночью спать. Помни моего друга съ его дядею. Имѣю честь поздравить васъ съ вашими успѣхами.

Сынъ моего искренняго друга вчера уѣхалъ. Дѣти большаго ума нерѣдко бываютъ хилы. Составленъ списокъ офицерамъ нашей дивизіи. Печеніе хлѣба. Я купилъ фунтъ чая и сажень дровъ. Столько трудовъ и заботъ пропаало попустому. Русскіе взяли Парижъ осьмнадцатаго Марта тысяча восемьсотъ четырнадцатаго года. Я не емъ хлѣба, но пью воду. Я емъ хлѣбъ, но не пью воды. Я не получалъ ни

письма, ни посылки. Въ этомъ письмѣ нѣтъ ни одной ошибки. Достань мнѣ денегъ. Воины желаютъ битвы и ищутъ славы. Славолюбецъ жаждетъ почестей. Ты хочешь богатства, и бойшься труда. Бочка полна вина. Добрый человекъ чуждъ злобы и зависти. Золото дороже серебра; свинецъ тяжелѣе желѣза. Онъ проситъ милости ради Христа. Отдыхъ пріятенъ послѣ работы. Вдоль этого берега тянется цѣпь горъ. Болѣе бродятъ около деревни.

Мой братъ хранитъ присутствіе духа при всѣхъ неприятностяхъ въ жизни. Сей городъ построенъ на крутомъ берегу быстрой рѣки. Церковь о пяти главахъ. Онъ плачетъ по своему отцу.

ВОЛШЕБНИЦА.

Одна вдова имѣла двухъ дочерей: старшая была похожа на свою мать и лицѣмъ и нравомъ, то есть, она была такъ же дурна и такъ же зла, какъ ей мать. Никто не любилъ ихъ; всѣ отъ нихъ бѣжали. Меньшая же была прекрасна и добродушна. Всѣ её любили. Но злая мать и злая сестра её ненавидѣли; безпрестанно бранили; одна она должна была работать въ домѣ, топить печь, мести горнищы, стрѣпать въ кухнѣ. Бѣдная плакала съ утра до вечера, но не лѣнилась работать; была послушна, терпѣлива, и всё то было напрасно, ибо ничѣмъ не могла угодить на злую мать и на злую сестру свою.

Ежедневно эта бѣдная дѣвушка должна была, съ большимъ кувшиномъ, ходить за водою въ близкую рощу, въ которой находился чистый источникъ. Однажды пошла она, по обыкновѣнію, къ этому источнику. День былъ очень жарокъ. Наполнивъ кувшинъ водою, она возвращалась домой. Вдругъ видитъ передъ собою старушку. «Дитя моё!» — сказала ей старушка: — «дай мнѣ напиться. Я устала; мнѣ жарко.» — «Съ охотою, бабушка!» сказала дѣвушка: «вотъ! напейся!» И она подала старушкѣ кувшинъ.

Старушка отъ слабости сѣла на траву, а молодая красавица стала передъ нею на колѣни, и осторожно поддерживала кувшинъ, пока она пила воду. — «Благодарю тебя, милая!»

сказала старушка, напившись: «Вѣжу, что ты доброе, ласковое дитя, и хочу тебя наградить за твою услужливость. Знай же, я волшебница, и нарочно взяла на себя видъ старушки, чтобы тебя испытать. Радуюсь, что ты такая добрая, и вотъ, что я хочу для тебя сдѣлать: всякій разъ, когда ты скажешь слово, изо рта у тебя выпадетъ или прекрасный цвѣтокъ, или драгоценный камень, или большая жемчужина. Прості, дружокъ!» И волшебница исчезла.

Прекрасная дѣвушка возвратилась домой. «Гдѣ ты такъ долго была?» спросила у ней съ сердцемъ мать. — «Что ты такъ долго дѣлала въ рощѣ?» закричала злая сестра. — «Виновата, замѣшкалась!» отвѣчала бѣдняжка, и въ ту самую минуту съ прекрасныхъ губъ ея скатились двѣ розы, двѣ жемчужины и два большіе изумруда. — «Что я вѣжу?» воскликнула удивленная мать. «Это цвѣты! Это драгоценные камни! Что съ тобою сдѣлалось!» — Красавица простоудушно рассказала ей о своей встрѣчѣ съ волшебницею, а между тѣмъ цвѣты, алмазы и жемчугъ такъ и сыпались съ губъ ея. — «Хорошо же!» проворчала мать: «завтра пошлю въ рощу старшую мою дочь, и съ нею то же будетъ.»

И на другое утро, она сказала своей дочері: «Нынче пойдешь за водою ты: возьми кувшинъ; но смотри же, если встрѣтишь у источника старушку, дай ей напиться и приласкайся къ ней хорошенько.» Злая дѣвчонка нахмурилась, съ досадою взяла кувшинъ; нехотя пошла въ рощу, и во всю дорогу ворчала. Старушка сидѣла уже у источника. «Зачерпни мнѣ воды, моя милая!» сказала она дѣвчкѣ: «жарко, хочу напиться.» — «Какъ бы не такъ! Я не за тѣмъ пришла сюда, чтобы услуживать старымъ бродягамъ. Напѣшься и безъ меня!» — «Какая же ты грубая!» сказала ей старушка: «Я накажу тебя. Съ этихъ поръ, при каждомъ словѣ твоёмъ, будетъ выпадать у тебя изо рта или змѣя или лягушка.» Она исчезла, а злая дѣвчонка побѣжала домой, разбивши съ досады кувшинъ свой. «Что скажешь, милая дочка!» спросила мать, увидѣвъ её издалека. — «Нечего сказать!» отвѣчала дочь, и вдругъ выскочили изо рта ея двѣ змѣи и двѣ жабы! — «Что я вѣжу! какой страхъ!» закричала мать. «Но во всемъ этомъ виновата твой сестра! Я дамъ ей знать.» И онѣ бросились бить меньшую дочь.

Она, испугавшись угрозы, скрылась въ рощу, долго бѣжала, не смѣя оглянуться, забѣжала далѣко, и наконецъ потеряла дорогу. Но это было къ ея счастью. Царскій сынъ, который тутъ забавлялся охотою, находился въ это время въ рощѣ; онъ увидѣлъ красавицу, которая, сидя на травѣ, горько плакала. — «Что съ тобою сдѣлалось? о чёмъ ты плачешь, милая?» спросилъ онъ, взявъ её ласково за руку. — «Богѣ мой! какъ мнѣ не плакать! Матушка выгнала меня изъ дому.» Она говорила, а цвѣты и драгоценные камни сыпались съ ея розовыхъ губъ, и слёзы обращались въ жемчужины. — «Что это значить?» спросилъ царскій сынъ: «отъ чего эти цвѣты, жемчуги и камни?» Бѣдняжка разсказала царскому сыну о томъ, что съ нею случилось. — Онъ полюбилъ её, и полюбилъ ещё болѣе за то, что она была такъ добра и мила, нежели за ея цвѣты и драгоценные камни. Онъ взялъ её съ собою, представилъ её Царю, отцу своему, которому она также понравилась, и Царь позволилъ сыну на ней жениться. Такимъ образомъ она сдѣлалась Царевною, а по смерти Царя, когда ея мужъ взошёлъ на отцовскій престолъ, Царицею, и была Царицею доброю. А злая сестра ея? что сдѣлалось съ нею? — Она жалостнымъ образомъ кончила свою жизнь. Мать, которую она безпрестанно сердила и огорчала, принуждена была её выгнать изъ дому; никто не хотѣлъ ей дать пристанища, и она скрылась въ лѣсъ, гдѣ скоро умерла съ досады и голода.





TABLE OF CONTENTS

FIRST PART

LEXICOLOGY.

	Page
Division of the Grammar	1
Sounds or letters	2
Alphabet	2
Division of the letters	6
Pronunciation of the letters	7
Vowels	7
Semi-vowels	11
Consonants	13
Syllables and words	17
Tonic accent	17
<i>Reading-Exercise</i>	18
Elements of speech	22
Division of words	23
Roots of words	24
Inflections of words	26
Metaplasms of words	26
Permutation of letters	26
Epenthesis and prosthesis	28
Apocope and Syncope	29
THE SUBSTANTIVE	29
Division of substantives	29
Properties of nouns	30

	Page
Genders	30
Aspects	34
Numbers	36
Cases	37
Declension of substantives	39
Regular substantives	39
Rules of the declensions	40
General rules	41
Special rules	42
Paradigms of the declensions of substantives	43
First declension	43
Second declension	48
Third declension	50
Irregular nouns	54
<i>Exercises in the declension of substantives</i>	58
THE ADJECTIVE	65
Division of the adjectives	65
Qualifying adjectives	65
Possessive adjectives	65
Properties of adjectives	67
Gender, number, case	68
Apocope of the termination	68
Degrees of signification	69
Declension of adjectives	75
Paradigms of the declensions of adjectives	76
First declension	78
Second declension	80
Third declension	83
<i>Exercises on the adjectives</i>	83
THE NUMERALS	88
Division of numerals	88
Cardinal and ordinal numerals	89
Declension of the numerals	91
Paradigms of the declension of the numerals	92
Special rules of the numerals	95
<i>Exercises on the numerals</i>	97
THE PRONOUN	102
Division of the pronouns	102

	Page
Paradigms of the declension of the pronouns . . .	104
Declension of the pronouns	105
<i>Exercises on the pronouns</i>	107
THE VERB	112
Division of verbs	112
Inflections of the verb	113
Tenses	113
Aspects	113
Moods	116
Persons, numbers and genders	117
Forms derived from the verb	118
Conjugation	118
Regular verbs	122
Formation of the inflections of the verb	123
Paradigms of the conjugations of the regular verbs	125
First conjugation	128
Second conjugation	130
Third conjugation	136
Irregular verbs	137
Conjugation of irregular verbs	138
Delineation of verbs	142
Simple verbs	143
Prepositional verbs	150
<i>Exercises on the verbs</i>	166
THE PARTICIPLE	173
Division of the participles	173
Active and neuter participles	173
Passive participles	174
Declension of the participles	175
Passive verbs	176
<i>Exercises on the participles</i>	176
THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND	178
Division of the adverbs	178
Formation of the adverbs	179
Degrees of comparison	180
Gerunds	180
<i>Exercises on the adverbs and the gerunds</i>	181
THE PREPOSITION	183

	Page
Division of the prepositions	183
Government of the prepositions	185
<i>Exercises on the prepositions</i>	185
THE CONJUNCTION	187
<i>Exercises on the conjunctions</i>	188
THE INTERJECTION	188

SECOND PART

SYNTAX.

Division of syntax	189
CONCORD OF WORDS	189
<i>Exercises on the concord of words</i>	192
DEPENDENCE OF WORDS	193
Nominative	194
Vocative	195
Accusative	195
Dative	196
Instrumental	197
Genitive	198
Prepositional	200
<i>Exercises on the dependence of words</i>	200
CONSTRUCTION	210

THIRD PART

ORTHOGRAPHY.

USE OF THE LETTERS	212
Vowels	212
Semi-vowels	215
Consonants	215
Doubling of consonants	218
Capital letters	219
DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES	219
ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS	220
Russian words	220
Foreign words	223
ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS	226
MARKS OF PUNCTUATION	227

FOURTH PART

PROSODY.

	Page
Division of prosody	229
ORTHOEPY	229
Prosodical or tonic accent	229
Place of the accent	230
VERSIFICATION	231
Tonic versification	231
Foot or metre	231
Denomination of the verses	232
Cæsura	237
Termination of the verses	238
Rhyme	239
Stanza or strophe	239
Poetic licenses	240
SOLUTION OF THE EXERCISES	241



LEIPZIG,—PRINTED BY W. DRUGULIN.

14 DAY USE
RETURN TO DESK FROM WHICH BORROWED
LOAN DEPT.

This book is due on the last date stamped below,
or on the date to which renewed. Renewals only:
Tel. No. 642-3405

Renewals may be made 4 days prior to date due.
Renewed books are subject to immediate recall.

FEB 24 1972 77

REC'D LD FEB 11 72 -10 PM • 7

MAR 5 1972 35

REC'D LD MAR 7 1972 35

LD21A-40m-8,'71
(P6572s10)476-A-32

General Library
University of California
Berkeley

U. C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES



C047752196

